NATIONAL ARCHIVES & PUBLIC RECORDS SERVICES
OF PAPUA NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORTS

DISTRICT: Southern H/lands

STATION: Nipa

VOLUME No: 1

ACCESSION No: 496.

1959 - 1960

ISBN: 9980 - 910 - 73 - 9

Filmed by/for the National Archives of Papua New Guinea,
PORT MORESBY - 1992

Sole Custodian: National Archives of Papua New Guinea.

Papua New Guinea Patrol Reports

Digitized version made available by

Copyright: Government of Papua New Guinea. This digital version made under a license granted by the National Archives and Public Records Services of Papua New Guinea.

Use: This digital copy of the work is intended to support research, teaching, and private study.

Constraints: This work is protected by the U.S. Copyright Law (Title 17, U.S.C.) and the laws of Papua New Guinea. Use of this work beyond that allowed by "fair use" requires written permission of the National Archives of Papua New Guinea. Responsibility for obtaining permissions and any use and distribution of this work rests exclusively with the user and not the UC San Diego Library.

Note on digitized version: A microfiche copy of these reports is held at the University of California, San Diego (Mandeville Special Collections Library, MSS 0215). The digitized version presented here reflects the quality and contents of the microfiche. Problems which have been identified include misfiled reports, out-of-order pages, illegible text; these problems have been rectified whenever possible. The original reports are in the National Archives of Papua New Guinea (Accession no. 496).

PATROL RI ORT OF: NIPA ACC. No: 496.

Volume No: ...1..... .....1959/60..... Number of Reports: ..6.....

RORT No:	FOLIO:	OFFICER CONDUCTING PATROL	AREA PATROLLED	MAPS, PTS	PERIOD OF PATROL	FIC No:
-1959/60	1-13	J. JORDAN - ADO	NEMBI RIVER VALLEY - ESTABLISHMENT OF NIPA PATROL POST	map	31/8/59 -- 23/12/59	
- 1959/60	1-17	J. JORDAN	NEMBI RIVER	map	19/1/60 -- 2/2/60	
- 1959/60	1-19	D.N. BUTLER - P.O	NEMBI RIVER		23/2/60 - 1/3/60	
-1959/60	1-38	D.N. BUTLER	NEMBI VALLEY. NIPA/NEMBI LOCAL GOVT COUNCIL.		11/3/60 - 29/5/60	
-1959/60	1-38	D.N. BUTLER	EMIA CREEK		2/6/60 - 20/6/60	
-1959/60	1-67	R.A. HOAD	NIPA BASIN	map	27/6/60 - 7/8/60	

SOUTHERN HIGHLANDS DISTRICT PATROL REPORTS

1959/60

NIPA

Report No.	Officer Conducting Patrol	Area Patrolled
NIPA		
1 - 59/60	J.Jordan	Nembi River Valley (Establishment of Nipa Patrol Post)
2 - 59/60	J.Jordan	Nembi River
3 - 59/60	D.N.Butler	Nembi River
4 - 59/60	D.N.Butler	Nembi Valley. Nipa/Membi L of C.
5 - 59/60	D.N.Butler	Emia Creek
6 - 59/60	R.A.Hoad	Nipa Basin

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORT

District of... Southern Highlands ..... Report No. NIPA No 1 3. 59/60

Patrol Conducted by..... J. Jordan, A.D.O .....

Area Patrolled..... Nembi River Valley .....

Patrol Accompanied by Europeans..... Mr. H.N. Desailly, A.D.C.

Natives.. Fourteen police, twenty five carriers

Duration—From 31 / 8 /1959 to 28/12/1959

Number of Days..... One hundred and twenty

Did Medical Assistant Accompany ?... No

Last Patrol to Area by—District Services 13/11/1958

Medical ..../..../19.....

Map Reference... District Map, Southern Highlands, Sketch map attached.

Objects of Patrol... Establishment of patrol post and airstrip

consolidation of Admistration influence.

DIRECTOR OF DISTRICT SERVICES
AND NATIVE AFFAIRS,
PORT MORESBY.

Forwarded, please.

/ /19

District Commissioner

Amount Paid for War Damage Compensation .... £.....

Amount Paid from D.N.E. Trust Fund .... £.....

Amount Paid from P.E.D.P. Trust Fund .... £.....

.....

.....

.....

67-15-22

17th March, 1960.

The District Officer,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

Patrol Report Nipa Ext.1 of 1959-60

Refers. Your 30/1-836 of the 8th March, 1960.

"Lifting of the restrictions on stores under some circumstances" means that should you require additional stores for which you have no funds, these funds will be approved.

(T.G. Aitchison),
Acting Director.

67/5/22.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

In Reply
Please Quote

No. 30/1-836

"KWD:GIE"

STAFF
11 MAR 1960
SECTION
NATIVE AFFAIRS DEPARTMENT

District Office,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

8th March. 1960.

The Director,
Department of Native Affairs,
Konedobu,
PAPUA.

PATROL REPORT NIPA No.1 of 1959/60

Your memorandum 67-15-22 dated 12th February 1960 refers.

I am not sure what is meant on page 2 reference "lifting of the restrictions on stores under some circumstances" and would appreciate advice as to what restrictions you have in mind.

(K. W. DYER)
District Officer

"KWD:GIE" 30/1-836

District Office,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

8th March, 1960.

The Director,
Department of Native Affairs,
Konedobu,
P A P U A.

PATROL REPORT NIPA No.1 of 1959/60

Your memorandum 67-15-22 dated 12th February 1960 refers.

I am not sure what is meant on page 2 reference "lifting of the restrictions on stores under some circumstances" and would appreciate advice as to what restrictions you have in mind.

(K. E. DYER)
District Officer

INTER-OFFICE MEMORANDUM

To P.R.O. From D.N.A.

Subject P/R. No. 1. 59/60. N/P&A Date 15. 3. 60.

Suffix suitable part of
the report may be made
subject of News Release.
N.H. & N.A. agree.

J. L. Auchinleck
a/D.N.A.

Govt. Print.—3739/12.59—1,000 Pads.

talks between the opposing groups.

In reporting on the Native situation, Mr. Jordan said that while friendly relations had been established with the various tribes, it could be expected that as in other turbulent primitive areas, some difficulties might arise before the more belligerent groups settled down to living peacefully with their neighbours.

Correction

TERRITORY of PAPUA and NEW GUINEA

Administration
Press Statement
No. 11.

Port Moresby,
February 26, 1960.

NEW PATROL POST ESTABLISHED IN AREA OF TRIBAL CONFLICT

A patrol report by Assistant District Officer J. Jordan gives a detailed account of establishing a new patrol post in an area where the tribes are engaged in sporadic inter-clan fighting.

The post is at Nipa in the Nembi Valley, west of Mendi, the headquarters for the Southern Highlands District.

This formerly unadministered area is occupied by tribes who traditionally resort to fighting as a means ofsettling their disputes. The establishment of a patrol post there is the first step in bringing about peace in the valley, and providing the conditions and services necessary to assist the people to progress out of primitive tribal standards.

At the station site many of the local tribesmen readily accepted employment clearing land and helping to erect temporary buildings of native materials. However, from time to time small groups returned to their villages, explaining that they were going to take part in inter-clan fighting.

As work on station and airstrip construction progressed Mr. Jordan started patrolling through the valley, and at a point four miles from the patrol post he and his eleven Papuan and New Guinean police walked into the middle of a fight between several hundred tribesmen. Neither of the two fighting groups showed any hostility to the patrol, and some of the combatants invited the patrol to camp at their village nearby.

Following the patrol's arrival several groups of warriors decided to withdraw from the fight. Mr. Jordan reports that he decided against actual intervention as until he had an opportunity to explain that the Administration's only interest was to stop the fight, and it was siding with neither group, intervention could have provoked immediate hostility from all factions involved, compelling the use of force by the patrol, with the risk of more casualties than actually occurred in the tribal clash. When the fighting for the day was called off, Mr. Jordan ascertained that although several hundred warriors were involved, total casualties for all the groups taking part were four men wounded.

Describing the clash Mr. Jordan said that the two main opposing groups were the Injip and the Soa people. The former fought from the security of a stand of casuarina trees, and the Soa men from behind full-length shields. As the fortunes of the battle were going against the Soas, one of their warriors advanced under the protection of his shield to within arrow range of the Injip men. Watching closely through binoculars Mr. Jordan saw the Soa's arrow speed from his bow into the midst of the Injip people, and a howl of dismay from the Injips gave out that a man had been seriously wounded with an arrow in the chest. Mr. Jordan said there was one incongruous touch about this age old method of settling disputes in that when the Soa man drew back his bowstring, it was seen that his right wrist, with which he drew the bowstring and arrow, was encased in a Victoria Bitter beer can. This at some time had evidently been carried back or traded through the Nembi Valley by neighbouring tribesmen after visiting Mendi.

After the fighting ceased Mr. Jordan made friendly contact with the combatants, ordering them to cease tribal attacks and instead settle their disputes by peaceful means. He informed them that the Administration would assist in arranging and conducting mediation

(over)

talks between the opposing groups.

In reporting on the Native situation, Mr. Jordan said that while friendly relations had been established with the various tribes, it could be expected that as in other turbulent primitive areas, some difficulties might arise before the more belligerent groups settled down to living peacefully with their neighbours.

H9687-N/60.
H9683-N/60.

25th February, 1960.

The Assistant Administrator,
Department of the Administrator,
KONEDOBU.

Subject: Patrol Report No.1 of 1959/60.
Reference: A.A.11/60 of 19th February, 1960.

The Police mentioned in this report, Constables BAJUE and MAKI were charged before the District Officer, Mendi, Mr. K.W.Dyer, on the following charge:- "That on or about the 11th December, 1959 at Nipa, the defendants BAJUE and MAKI did behave in a manner to the prejudice of good order and discipline, contrary to Section 23(c) of the Royal Papua and New Guinea Constabulary Ordinance, 1955, as amended."

They were found guilty by Mr.Dyer and sentenced to be confined to Barracks for 28 days with loss of pay and extra drill one hour morning and afternoon every second day, BAJUE to be posted to ERAVE and MAKI to MENDI.

They were not charged with desertion by Mr.Dyer as in fact they had not deserted but rather had absented themselves from their place of duty. They saved themselves from the charge of desertion by reporting to Mendi, their main station.

On the 18th December, 1959, the District Officer, Mendi, advised that these two men refused to perform extra drill. They were dismissed forthwith.

The previous patrol record of these men is:-

BAJUE, No

	Conduct	Comments	Officer.
Tagari River	Good	Very willing	R Browne
Kobara	Good	Be O.K.	N.J.Grant
Wabafugwa	Good	Developing well	J.P.Sinclair
Wabafugwa	Good	" "	J.P.Sinclair
Tagari River	Good	Shows promise	R.Browne
Paru/Tumbudu	Good	Good potential	J.P.Sinclair
Mendi/Tari	Good	A trier	J.P.Sinclair
Jagari Road	Good	Good	R.Hoad
Jagari Road	Good	Good	M.Braumidge
Limbiala	Good	Good	M.Braumidge

...2

MAKI.

To	Conduct	Comments	Officer.
Tagari River	Fair	Very new	N.J.Grant
Strictland River	Good	Will be a good constable	
Tagari River	Good	Good	J.P.Sinclair
Wabafugwa	Good	Good	N.J.Grant
"	"	"	J.P.Sinclair
Paru/Tumbudu	"	"	"
Kabana	"	Excellent	R.Hoad

These two Constables had given excellent service previous to this misconduct. The District Officer saw fit to charge them as he did and it is the policy of this Headquarters to always support the officer on the spot unless he is obviously wrong. It is considered that the action taken by the District Officer in this matter was correct.

C.NORMOYLE
Commissioner of Police.

Noted: I think you draw a fine distinction between A.W.L. and desertion. I would not be worried if there was a calm local situation, there was not, there was vicious fighting and burning of villages. This could possibly have been turned against the patrol, as has occurred previously in the Southern Highlands. It is these conditions from which they "deserted".

J.T.G. J.T.G.
14/3

INTER-OFFICE MEMORANDUM

To A. A.

Subject

From

Date

Attention A10.

I understand Commissioner of Police has sent his reply to this attachment direct to S. of Administration & I am returning file for resubmission with that memo.

26/2. G.

Govt. Print—2759/12.49.—1,000 pads.

A.A.11/60.

KONEDOBU.
19th February, 1960.

The Commissioner of Police,

KONEDOBU.

PATROL REPORT NIPA NO.1 OF 1959/60.

In the above Patrol Report submitted by Mr. J. Jordan of Nipa, Southern Highlands, he alleges that two policemen had deserted during the night.

2. In his covering letter on the report, the District Officer states that "Constables Banjue and Maki were charged on a disciplinary offence at Mendi. They subsequently refused drill awarded and their dismissal from the force has been confirmed by the Commissioner of Police."

3. Mr. Jordan, at the time of the desertion, was on patrol where there was a great deal of fighting. It must have been most important to him to retain his police strength and the desertion of these two police might have meant the success or failure of his patrol. I have not referred this matter to the Department of Law, but I am wondering whether dismissal from the Force was sufficient punishment and whether other punishments should have been meted out to them.

4. I would appreciate your advice on this matter.

(J.T. GUNTHER)
ASSISTANT ADMINISTRATOR.

DNA.
2/5/61 AA
Com of Police ... please
... 24/...

DEPARTMENT OF THE ADMINISTRATOR

No.....

Memorandum

Date.....

To H.H. from the Assistant Administrator

Yes

An interesting report - parts of it should be made upon release - especially the visit of the warrior who brought victory to his side having a V.B. beer tin on his wrist (Patrol report #87). The detention of two policemen - Glorious work. We should no what disciplinary actions were taken

Please return 4/7/42

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

In Reply Please Quote

No. 67-15-22.

Department of Native Affairs,

MEMORANDUM TO: 12th February, 1960.

Assistant Administrator,
KONEDOBU.

PATROL REPORT NIPA No. 1.1959/60.

Your attention is invited to the contents of the report.

It is an interesting record of the establishment of NIPA Patrol Post in the NEMBI Valley in the Southern Highlands district.

Perhaps you may consider a news release of suitable sections of the report.

(A. A. Roberts)
Director.

desirable to either have adequate supplies of rations accompanying the party or for supplies to be dropped. This will help eliminate the necessity to remove food from gardens in the absence of the owners, and thus avoid misunderstanding.

Should you require some lifting of the restrictions on stores under some circumstances we can arrange for the necessary removal if you so request.

I feel that as the Administration were primarily responsible for the deaths of the PAEHONGA people that some recompense be paid their relatives. The timing of the payment is, of course, left for you to decide.

Do not attempt to acquire land in excess of our immediate requirements at this stage.

In road development to assist in communications, I agree.

Mr. Jordan has adequately recorded an arduous job well done.

(A. A. Roberts)
Director

67-15-22.

12th February, 1960.

District Officer,
MENDI.

PATROL REPORT MIPA NO.1 1959/60.

Receipt is acknowledged of the above Patrol Report and your covering comments. I agree the minimum station development compatible with creating an impression of permanence is desirable in this particular case.

The sections concerning police have been discussed with the Chief of Police who is well aware of difficulties which arrive when police are engaged on duty in remote areas. He assures me he will give every support to our officers, particularly those engaged on arduous duties in unsettled areas.

I agree in the approach of non-intervention in tribal clashes for the present; however we shall have to take action immediately the Post is firmly established and all parties to the unrest may be readily contacted.

I suggest some record be made now of the people who are at present in possession of land. We shall sooner or later have to establish boundaries and it may be accepted that the landowners are those in possession of land at the time of the establishment of law and order.

Be careful the AGENDA people are not antagonised by the occupation of what were formerly their lands.

It is gratifying to note that the general attitude of the people is not antagonistic towards the Administration. This attitude might be expected to change in some cases when it is necessary to discipline people during the establishment of law and order, and should this situation arise, every effort will have to be made to explain to the people concerned the necessity to take such action.

When efforts in the establishment of law and order are being made you must ensure your officers do not become over confident and move with too little police protection.

I agree that areas other than MIPA be considered for the establishment of a Headquarters.

I appreciate the difficulty in your supply problem but please do ensure that patrols have ample trade goods for the purchase of food and material. In cases where there is likely to be hostility it is

67-15-22

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

"KWT:GIE"

In Reply Please Quote

No. 30/1-530

District Officer
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

12th January, 1960.

The Director,
Department of Native Affairs,
KONEDOBU.

PATROL REPORT NIPA NO.I OF 1959/60

Attached hereto Mr. Jordan's report on the establishment of the NIPA Pat rol Post, airfield and patrolling in the area.

The NIPA Airstrip is now open to commercial operation subject to rainfall restrictions and progress on establishing the station with the usual bush material has been good.

It is quite evident from the report that the main task ahead is the cessation of inter group fighting and the movement of patrols through the area to attain this end. Road systems, further station development etc I feel should be a very minor consideration until better contact and control is established. In any case, at this stage, a minimum of station development is advisable as aerial survey has shown extensive native gardens and probable dense populations much further south down the valley. Further patrolling and surveys of population may well show a need for re-siting the station further south. In the meantime, NIPA provides a very good access and base from which these patrols now operate.

At the present stage I endorse Mr. Jordan's views as to his non intervention in the graphically described fighting between the SOA and INJIP groups. However, this type of fighting has to be stopped and it will be interesting to see the effectiveness of this type of approach.

Constables BANJUE and MAKI were charged on a disciplinary offence at MENDI. They subsequently refused drill awarded and their dismissal from the force has been confirmed by the Commissioner of Police.

Sufficient staff should be available at NIPA for extensive patrolling. Mr. Patrol Officer Butler is proceeding to NIPA shortly and will relieve Mr. Jordan who proceeds on leave early March. Mr. Patrol Officer Hoad will join Mr. Butler in April.

Five sun points of the attached map would be appreciated.

(K. W. DYER)
District Officer

C of D (S & R)

You might like to see this.
A good report of a good job.
P.R.O. might be able to make a press release on it. 29/1.

c.c. The Assistant District Officer,
NIPA.

"KD:6IF"

30/1-590

District Officer
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

12th January, 1960.

The Director,
Department of Native Affairs,
KONEDOBU.

PATROL REPORT NIPA NO.I OF 1959/60

Attached hereto Mr. Jordan's report on the establishment of the NIPA Pat rol Post, airfield and patrolling in the area.

The NIPA Airstrip is now open to commercial operation subject to rainfall restrictions and progress on establishing the station with the usual bush material has been good.

It is quite evident from the report that the main task ahead is the cessation of inter group fighting and the movement of patrols through the area to attain this end. Road systems, further station development etc I feel should be a very minor consideration until better contact and control is established. In any case, at this stage, a minimum of station development is advisable as aerial survey has shown extensive native gardens and probable dense populations much further south down the valley. Further patrolling and surveys of population may well show a need for re-siting the station further south. In the meantime, NIPA provides a very good access and base from which these patrols now operate.

At the present stage I endorse Mr. Jordan's views as to his non intervention in the graphically described fighting between the SOA and ENJAP groups. However, this type of fighting has to be stopped and it will be interesting to see the effectiveness of this type of approach.

Constables BANJUE and MAKI were charged on a disciplinary offence at MENDI. They subsequently refused drill awarded and their dismissal from the force has been confirmed by the Commissioner of Police.

Sufficient staff should be available at NIPA for extensive patrolling. Mr. Patrol Officer Butler is proceeding to NIPA shortly and will relieve Mr. Jordan who proceeds on leave early March. Mr. Patrol Officer Head will join Mr. Butler in April.

Five sun points of the attached map would be appreciated.

(K. W. BYRR)
District Officer

c.c. The Assistant District Officer,
NIPA.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA.

Introduction. The purpose of the patrol was to establish and consolidate an Administration Patrol Post in the Nembi River valley, of the Mendi Sub-District of the Southern Highlands. Extension and consolidation of Administration control of the area was also undertaken.

The area concerned has been visited by patrols on previous occasions, and the Administration was by no means unknown to the Nembi people, however no attempts had been made by earlier patrols to bring about pacification of the area, and the people of the area continued the way of life that has been theirs since time immemorial.

Diary.
August.
Monday, 31st. Departed with eight police per Land Rover to Tulum where patrol stores have been concentrated. Settled in for night.

September.
Tuesday, 1st. Day spent breaking up stores into suitable carrier loads. Runner despatched to LAI Valley to MR. S. Markwell, P.O. requesting for carriers. Advice received that Mr. M. Brownridge, will be proceeding to Tulum tomorrow with some carriers.

Wednesday, 2nd. Mr. Brownridge and some carriers arrived at mid-day. Later Mr. K.Leen, A/ D.O. Mendi, arrived with Mr. R.N.Desailly, A.D.O. Messrs. Leen and Brownridge returned to Mendi, Mr. Desailly remaining Tulum to join the patrol.Mr. Desailly accompanied by five police ex Koroba and Tari detachments.

Thursday, 3rd. Departed with 60 carriers to Mapekbol at 9.15 a.m. End of carrier line arrived at 1.45 p.m. Foods purchased.

Friday, 4th. Returned carriers to Tulum with police escort in morning, Mr. Desailly and remainder of stores arrived at Mapekbol at 2.30 p.m.

Saturday, 5th. Twelve Nipa area natives visited the patrol taking with them upon their return a battery charger. Mr. S. Markwell, P.O. visited the patrol in p.m. Mr. Markwell brought eighteen carriers with him, and these and a number of Mapekbol carriers were despatched to Tulum to bring some further stores.

Sunday, 6th. Last of stores arrived. Of the 18 carriers brought by Mr. Markwell only four remain, remainder deserted.

Monday, 7th. Departed Mapekbol at 8.55 a.m. with 150 carriers, arriving at 2.30 p.m. Carriers very slow, camp made for night. Radio contact attempted with Mendi on portable transmitter. Reception satisfactory, transmission unreadable.

Tuesday, 8th. Departed Agenda in a.m. and after two hours over poor tracks arrived at the Nipa flats. Pitched camp.

Wednesday, 9th. Consolidated camp, approximately 150 locals assisting. Wireless contact made with Goroka , airdrop site cleared. 25 Mendi area carriers elected to remain Nipa, remainder returned to Mendi with police escort.

Thursday, 10th. Two airdrops received. 100% recovery. Mr. Desailly did rough measurement survey of probable airstrip site. At 5 p.m. a disturbance heard from nearby village. Later report received that a woman had been killed in an attack on the village. Foods purchased.

Friday, 11th. General clearing of station site and construction of a store commenced. Mr. Desailly climbed nearby peak for mapping purposes.

Saturday, 12th. Climbed nearby ridge from station for survey of lower valley area. Some men from Sobar area visited station and assisted in work. These people are the ones who have been fighting with the Agenda people, and caused the Agenda people to abandon the area that has been selected for the station.

September.

Sunday, 13th. No locals came in to work today, carrier line engaged in tree felling along drive approach until mid-day.

Monday, 14th. Labour came forward and clearing continued. Mr. Desailly measured [illegible] feet for initial light aircraft strip.

Tuesday, 15th. Approximately 400 local labour available today. Clearing N.W. end of strip.

Wednesday, 17th. 60 labour only came today, remainder have gone to pig-feast in Lai valley. Work commenced on strip surface today.

Thursday, 18th. Working on strip. Food purchases made.

Saturday, 20th. Strip work continued.

Sunday, 21st. Police escort and carriers sent to Mendi. Approximately 500 persons turned up to work today, but work hampered by lack of implements. Pulim group departed at 1 p.m. as they are going fighting tomorrow.

Monday, 21st. Routine strip work and camp construction carried out. At approximately 9 p.m. Pulim area was raided and one house burnt down.

Tuesday, 22nd. Agenda people who have been working on the airstrip went off to assist Pulim in fighting. One man killed. Station work continued as usual.

Wednesday, 23rd. Routine work; store completed. Airdrop of shovels and blankets received. Very few local labour available.

Thursday, 24th. Police returned ex Mendi with stores. Routine station work.

Friday, 25th. Routine strip and housing construction.

Saturday, 26th. Routine work. Radio contact made with Hagen. ✓

Sunday, 27th. Small group of people came forward to work, remainder departed to fight.

Monday, 28th. Routine work. Further airdrop of stores received.

Tuesday, 29th. Routine strip work carried out. Now approximately 600 feet of strip has been prepared to date.

Wednesday, 30th. Routine strip work, commenced filling in of pond in centre of strip area.

October.

Thursday, 1st. Approximately 100 locals in to assist in work today.

Friday, 2nd. Routine strip work.

Saturday, 3rd. Routine strip construction.

Sunday, 4th. Carriers rested, local people came in to work. Trade supplies are almost exhausted. Police runners returned ex Mendi.

Monday, 5th. A few people only working today. Trade supplies finished.

Tuesday, 6th. Work ceased on strip, as no trade supplies available to pay local labour.

Wednesday, 7th. Small supply of cowrie shell dropped to the patrol ex Tari. sufficient for two days work payments.

October.

Thursday, 8th. Work proceeding on strip. In p.m. airdrop of salt received. ✓

Friday, 9th. Routine strip work.

Saturday, 10th. Routine strip work; two airdrops of rations received. Fighting again heard from the Pulim area.

Sunday, 11th. Labour rested. A few locals worked for a short period until interrupted by heavy rains.

Monday, 12th. Routine work, trade supplies again low.

Tuesday, 13th. Work proceeded on strip.

Wednesday, 14th. Airdrop of trade received. ✓

Thursday, 15th. Work continuing on strip.

Friday, 16th. Mr. Desailly and five police departed at 0630 hrs. on return to Koroba. Routine strip work continued.

Saturday, 17th. Routine strip work. In p.m. carrier line in ex Mendi, with two police reinforcements.

Sunday, 18th. Windsock erected at south-east end of the strip. Has now been no rain for ten days and fire hazard is very great. Burning off forbidden on station area.

Monday, 19th. Routine strip work continued.

Tuesday, 20th. Routine work, Timber gathering for construction of barracks.

Wednesday, 21st. Routine work; airdrop in p.m.

Thursday, 22nd. Routine strip work. Primary levelling of 1500 feet is now completed. The village people who have been assisting to date state that they are now going off to do their gardening and housing construction, which has suffered of late due to the incessant fighting prior to the advent of the patrol. People state that they will not be available for work for three months. Distroff advised strip ready for inspection by D.C.A.

Friday, 23rd. A few people came in from Komia area for work, but did not desire to work at the tasks they were directed to. Informed that they need only come work if prepared to work where and as directed.

Saturday, 24th. Komia people again in today to work, but after a short period left their appointed tasks. Accordingly discontinued work with them.

Sunday, 25th. Patrol rested.

Monday, 26th. Working on strip surface, and roofing of police barracks.

Tuesday, 27th. Working on side drains of strip, and barracks.

Wednesday, 28th. Routine work proceeding.

Thursday, 29th. Routine work.

Friday, 30th. Barrack building now completed. The station now has the following structures: one store, 32' x 16', which also provides sleeping quarters for an officer. One 22' x 16' rest house type structure, which serves as office and radio room, and further provides accomodation for a second officer. The new police barracks are 26'x 16', and a smaller structure has been made for the use of the carriers. In addition to these there are several smaller houses of 10' x 12' which houses patrol members. The present rest house structure will be suitable for married police accomodation when a residence is erected for the O.I.C. as it is in the barrack area. A site suitable for European occupancy has been selected at the N.W. end of the airstrip, where the aircraft will normally park and take off from.

October.
Saturday, 31st. Routine work on strip improving surfaces.

November.
Sunday, 1st. Patrol rested. Carriers and four police reinforcements arrived ex Mendi.

Monday, 2nd. Routine strip work. Airdrop received.

Tuesday, 3rd. Completed beds in police barracks.

Wednesday, 4th. Departed with eleven police for Komia at 0800 hours. Three police, and five other personnel left at station. Approximately 1¾ hrs. to Komia, altitude 6,300' A.S.L. Thence up valley to Ugmail which is sited at the head of the Nembi fall on the Nembi - Wage divide. Arrived at 12.30 p.m. after walks along good tracks, altitude 6,400' A.S.L. Camp made and foods purchased, people friendly. This point appears to be half-way to Magerima. Terrain is fairly even to here and appears satisfactory further on to Magerima. Should be feasible to put in a vehicular road to here witout great difficulty, and its probable extension to Magerima. Magerima is hidden from view from this point due to an intervening ridge, but it is possible to see some eight to ten miles towards Magerima over undulating terrain.

Thursday, 5th. Remained Ugmail. Group of people , 60 to 70, came forward to patrol. Talks with the people, foods purchased, and one pig. Firearms demonstration. Some of these people have visited Nipa during the stay of the patrol there.

Friday, 6th. Departed Ugmail at 0700 hrs. Walked along Wage fall to Ugun, approximately 1½ hrs. walk. This area is fairly heavily populated, and there is some inter-group fighting here. At present time the Ugmail people are just moving back to that area, which they had evacuated earlier due fighting. From Ugun walked back across Nembi divide, and after ½ hour arrived at Koia. Camped for night; to date tracks have been very good.

Saturday, 7th. Departed 0800 hrs passing through Karinj group. Altitude throughout this area is approximately 6,500' A.S.L. The area appears well-populated, and station is visible from this area. Descended to main valley floor to Sumpkibil, arriving at approximately 11 a.m. From this point the patrol moved on to Injip, arriving here at 12.30 p.m. Heavy fighting is in progress in this area at Kambijap. Patrol passed through the lines of the fighting villagers, skirting the actual skirmishing area. The fight is between the Injip and Tulim group on one side, supported by some Karinj people. The opposing group is made of SOA and EBII people.

Leader of the Ebil shouted to patrol for it to return whence it came. Ignored this advice and proceeded to a small settlement and dancing ground some half mile to the rear of the fighting. After an hour or so made contact with a few people and moved on to an old garden site some 200 yards distant from the fighting. Time now approximately 3 p.m. Waited here for a further hour and filled in time with bathing in nearby stream, and which proved most refreshing after several days absence from such decent watering places. Eventually some men came forward and invited the patrol to come up to Soa village which is on the edge of the fighting, and make camp there. Made camp and established friendly relations with those people who came forward. Village provides excellent vantage point for view of fighting, which waxes and wanes over some 600 yards of terrain from this point. Over the area of the fighting houses and trees have been razed and gardens spoilt.

In the late afternoon the Injip people drove the Soa group of people off the contested land to within a hundred yards of the patrol. Fighting then ceased for the day. Talks were had with the Soa people and they were advised that I desired them to cease fighting and endeavour settle the dispute with compensatory payments, but people are adamant in that they want blood vengeance.

Sunday, 8th. In the morning large groups of natives were seen coming in to join in the fighting, some 4-500 were counted, who were going to join the Soa

people. Talks were held with a small group of people from the Ar River area, and a firearms demonstration was given. Later majority of people departed to fighting area, though some decided not to join in fighting on account of the presence of the patrol, and remained on the hillsides as spectators.

Decided that patrol would not intervene at this stage in fighting, unless considered absolutely necessary in the event of one group or other being completely overwhelmed by the other group, with possibility of casualties to women and children in the villages at rear of fighting area. I feel that it will serve the Aministration long-range interests best, by refraining from patrol intervention in the fight, and endangering the newly established friendly relations with the people, by the possibility of a clash of force. I feel that such intervention should only be used when all groups of the valley have been contacted by the patrol, relations established, and there be no possibility of the people mistaking the motives and intentions of patrols which intervene in such matters.

By 1030 a.m. the SOA group were pressing the attack heavily, and had advanced across the razed village area of the Kambijap group, and were endeavouring to obtain a foothold in the main defence point of the INJIP group some 100 yards distant. The groups were seperated by a small ravine across which the fighting waxed and waned. A further group of KATINJ people had drawn into the fight at this stage to assist the INJIP people, and with their 70, total INJIP group is estimated at 300 men, with possibly 400 men on other side.

At this juncture I moved out of the camp with five police and an interpreter into the fighting area, remaining inside the lines of the SOA people. The front lines of the opponents were now only 150 feet apart, the INJIP group were fighting from the security of a casuarina stand of trees, and the SOA group from behind full length shields. However the attack was forced back and INJIP people made a sally, to endeavour regain area occupied by SOA group. Arrows started to fall about 40 feet to the side of the police party, where they were aimed at some SOA men, and I thought it wisest to withdraw the party lest a member be accidently injured. Neither side of the two fighting groups manifested any signs of hostility to the patrol, and I felt that the neutrality of the Administration had been firmly established in the minds of all groups concerned, and my talks to the people had indicated my disapproval of the fighting to them.

Following my appearance at the fighting area, several groups of those who were fighting decided to withdraw from the fighting. I felt that no further discouragement could be given without actiual intervention, and this I was loath to do, so took a photograph of scene, and retired to camp area and watched fight continue from there.

Later in day, INJIP people attacked and forced SOA group back to outskirts of camp, where SOA people fought from security of wild cane clumps. At approximately 3p.m. a SOA man advanced under the protection of a shield to within arrow range of a group of INJIP supporters. He was some 5-600 feet distant from me and I watched closely for outcome, through binoculars. I saw an arrow speed from his bow into the midst of the INJIP people above him. A howl of dismay from the group gave out that a man had been seriously wounded with an arrow in the chest. There was one rather incongrous touch about this age old method of settling disputes, in that when the SOA man drew back his bowstring, I noticed that his right wrist with which he drew the bowstring and arrow, was encased in a Victoria Bitter beer can.

By about 4 p.m. the fighting had finished for the day, and four casualties had been suffered by the INJIP gorup, two of the men being seriously wounded.

Some people brought the patrol a pig which was purchased, and the police shot same with a volley demonstrating to the people the effectiveness of firearms. Further talks were held with the people and it was explained to a group of them that though the Administration was against warfare between groups, it did not mean

that a person should not take up arms to defend his family and property, but that they should not attack other people, and that they should endeavour to seek peaceful settlement of disputes and in this the Administration would assist, and would further protect persons who desired to live peacefully, from onslaughts by others. General talks on the benefits accruing from cessation of warfare, and opening of area to peaceful movement by transients etc. desirous of moving through areas to places of employment or medical care or schooling.

Four young men agreed to accompany the patrol back to NIPA and to visit Mendi. During the day only a few women were seen, but many young male children were present from ages of 9 years upward, and these were all armed with small bows suitable to their strength, and accompanied their parents in the fighting.

Monday, 9th. Departed 7 a.m. for NIPA, across scene of yesterday's fighting to INJIP thence PULIM, and arrived at Nipa after 1 hr. 15 mins. pleasant walking.

Tuesday, 10th. Routine station work, levelling off of area in front of barracks and commencement of work on police mess.

Wednesday, 11th. Routine work of station as of yesterday. Seven police forwarded to MENDI for pay, and large number of local natives who wish to visit MENDI and will carry back station supplies.

Thursday, 12th. Working on police kitchen.

Friday, 13th. Working on police kitchen and air-strip extension. Airdrop today.

Saturday, 14th. Working on airstrip extension.

Sunday, 15th. INJIP people came in to assist on airstrip extension work. Strip is now 1600 feet length.

Monday, 16th. Improving strip surface.

Tuesday, 17th. Improving strip surface. Carriers returned ex Mendi.

Wednesday, 18th. Routine station work.

Thursday, 19th. Walked through to KAMBLJAP with detail of police to escort the SOA/EBIL group of men who visited MENDI, back to their own area. Further fighting has been going on in the general area, though this time apparently the SOA and INJIP people have made a temporary truce to give fight against a Lower NEMBI group of warriors. In p.m. district radio schedule; D.C. instructed patrol to remain at NIPA area pending D.C.A. inspection.

Friday, 20th. Clearing and levelling strip extension. Sounds of fighting heard from down the valley.

Saturday, 21st. Gathering materials for further buildings.

Sunday, 22nd. Patrol rested.

Monday, 23rd. Commenced second barracks. In p.m. advised Mendi that if D.C.A. not forthcoming, I desired to patrol to Lower NEMBI area.

Tuesday, 24th. Building barracks. Airstrip now cleared at approach end to 1700 feet, though only 1600 feet considered suitable for operations.

Wednesday, 25th. Despatched radio MENDI advising departing to patrol. Listened out to Mendi radio schedule at 0930 hours, and departed at 1030 to EBIL. Arrived at EBIL 1 hr. 50 mins. after leaving station. Talks with people. Slept night.

Thursday, 26th. Departed EBIL 0830 hrs. and moved along high ridges at approx. 6,300 feet altitude toward Lower NEMBI valley. Arrived at UJIBIA at 3.45 p.m. On occasion of visit by previous patrol this village showed hostile intentions,

towards the patrol. As the patrol approached the village, cries were heard, "Here come the people who killed our leaders". This was a reference to a small party of people from this area who went with a patrol to MENDI some years ago and were killed by a group of PABERONGA people whilst returning to their homes. This is allegedly the basis of the resentment and hostility which the people of this area have shown to the Administration.

The patrol was met by approximately 70 men armed with axes. I opened conversation with them and assured the men that I desired to be friendly with them and desired to sleep the night at their village. I also advised the people that though the patrol wished to be friendly, it would strenuously resist any overt moves made against patrol personel, and would resist any moves to force the patrol from the area. After a short period the people invited the patrol to the village area proper, where a camp was made. Foods were puchased from the people, some talks were made and the people presented a much friendlier front toward the patrol. At these gatherings many of the men had discarded their arms, and women and children came forward.

Friday, 27th. Remained UJIPIA consolidating relations with people. Firearms demonstration given to the people, and a very large quantity of foods purchased from the people. Many women and children present. Mail was dropped to the patrol and included a memo from the District Commissioner requesting immediate return of patrol to NIPA.

Saturday, 28th. Departed 0730 hrs. for TINOOM, thence KOL and KWIM. To MESUR which is at lower edge of the gorge seperating Upper and Lower NEMEI areas. From there departed along sides of valley of AR River, a NEMEI tributary, which has its head-waters above NIPA station. Arrived at KOMONDA at 2 p.m. and made camp midst heavy rain. Walking has been generally good to date and road prospects from NIPA to PABERONGA look good for vehicular movement.

Sunday, 29th. Departed at 0830 hrs. crossing AR River and climbing across hills; after 3 hours walking reached NIPA station, arriving at 11.30 a.m.

Monday, 30th. Routine station work continued with construction of buildings. In afternoon D.C. informed patrol to depart to KIP in the LAI River area to escort back Methodist Mission party.

December.

Tuesday, 1st. Departed at 0910 hrs. with two police for KIP, walking through heavy rain. Arrived KIP at 4.30 p.m. Rain still falling. In evening at 7 p.m. Revs. Young and Keightley arrived ex Kendi en route NIPA. Tracks poor.

Wednesday 2nd. Departed at 8 a.m. for NIPA with Methodist party, arriving NIPA at 5 p.m.

Thursday, 3rd. Departed with Revs. Young and Keightley on survey of general valley area vicinity of station. To INJIP thence SUMPIKIBIL and KUALE thence returning to NIPA. Walking time 5 hours.

Friday, 4th. Rev. Young departed for MENDI via MAPENGOL and TULUM. Assisted Rev. Kneightley with labour in clearing of temporary site by airstrip for erection of a building for use by him. Working on barracks also.

Saturday, 5th. Proceeding with work as of previous day.

Sunday, 6th. Patrol rested.

Monday, 7th. Commenced clearing of site for house of O.I.C. at top end of strip. Ten labourers assisting Methodist Mission gather cane for house roof.

Tuesday, 8th. Clearing continued.

Wednesday, 9th. All personel engaged gathering timber for housing.

Thursday, 10th. Commenced construction of a lock-up.

December.

Friday, 11th. Police engaged working on lock-up. Labour levelling surface of airstrip where subsidence has occurred. In p.m. after parade for evening flag lowering ceremony, Const. Banjue informed N.C.O. that he would not take his turn at mess-cook and that he and MAKI, a close relative desired to be returned to Mendi. All police have been taking turns at mess-orderly for a day each and on several occasions both Banjue and Maki have failed to carry out their turn, accordingly a roster was made out by O.I.C. and they are both due for mess duty in the next week. In afternoon Banjue, Maki and several other police who have been living in a small hut, were instructed that they had to move into the proper barracks which had been newly constructed for them, and completed five days ago, and which they have not yet moved into. The small shelter they had been living in must be removed as it is on edge of airstrip. Informed that if they failed to leave the shelter and move into barracks this would be regarded as a direct disobeyal of a order. In evening observed that Constable's Banjue and Maki had made no attempt to move into proper barracks.

Saturday, 12th. In early morning Senior Constable came to my house and informed me that Constable Banjue and Maki had deserted in night taking all their equipment with them, and have presumably gone to Mendi. Conversation held on radio with D.O. Mendi informing him that the two members had gone A.W.L. N.C.O. reported that on previous evening when on parade he asked the members if they had any grievance or reason for desiring return to Mendi, they replied, " No; but we were told that we would only be on patrol for three months and it is over that now."

In late evening an overland party arrived ex Mendi, consisting of wives and families of Constable's Makelion and Kompion. State that they departed from Mendi without informing any persons, as some persons at Mendi barracks had been slandering them alleging loose morals in the absence of their husbands, so they decided to clear out from there.

Sunday, 13th. Patrol rested.

Monday, 14th. Labour working onstruction of lock-up.

Tuesday, 15th. Civil Aviation Cessna aircraft landed with Senior Airport Inspector King and Mr. W. Guy. Also accompanying, Mr. K.Dyer, District Officer. Civil Aviation authorities requires lengthening of strip to 1900 feet prior to opening.

Wednesday, 16th. Mr. F.B. Creagh, C.P.C. arrived in a.m. per Cesana 170 aircraft, to assist on levelling of strip extension. Battery charger received also per same flight. Work commenced on strip extension. Rain in afternoon.

Thursday, 17th. Continued work on strip. My self and Mr. Keightley proceeded to KOMIA, approximately 1 hour 15 minutes walk away , and I endeavoured arrange for more labour to speed work on strip. Rain falling in afternoon.

Friday, 18th. Working on strip, rain delaying progress.

Saturday, 19th. Strip work proceeding, intermittent rain throughout day.

Sunday, 20th. Rain falling throughout day. Labour worked for approximately 5 hours putting in trenches for final levelling. Work abandoned after weather made further progress impossible.

Monday, 21st. Strip completed sufficient for opening, however closed due rainfall restrictions. Radio schedule with Mendi in p.m.. Mendi advise that airdrop which was scheduled last Thursday, and which was to supply needed trade items for payment of labour working on strip has failed to eventate as of yet due failure of Department of Civil Aviation to grant permission for an airdrop. Failure of this drop has further hampered completion of the necessary work required by Department of Civil Aviation.

December.

Tuesday, 22nd. 7 a.m. radio contact with Mendi unsuccessful, passed strip weather report via Jimmi River radio. No airdrop, trade supplies very low. Villagers assisting in cambering of the parking area.

Wednesday, 23rd. Radio contact again unsatisfactory. No airdrop personal supplies are also exhausted. Carriers working on married quarters.

Thursday, 24th. Labour gathering timber for married quarters.

Friday, 25th. Christmas day. Rested.

Saturday, 26th. Labour working on married quarters.

Sunday, 27th. Rested.

Monday, 28th. At approximately 11 a.m. Mr. H. Morton of the Mission Aviation Fellowship landed in a Cessna 180 aircraft and passed information to Civil Aviation authorities that the strip was now serviceable for a ircraft for a full 1900 feet. Strip should now be approved by D.C.A. for normal commercial operation. Mr. Creagh and self proceeded to Mendi per the aircraft, and patrol completed.

Native Affairs.

Relations established with the people of the area, have to date been very good, and it is to be hoped that this steady progress will continue.

With the establishment of friendly contacts however, the role of the patrol, in the next six months will greatly change, for the normal work of law enforcement will ever increasingly be followed, and disagreement could occur between a patrol and a group of natives who might transgress the introduced Rule of Law.

There will be two primary tasks to follow in the New Year, firstly to bring out a peaceful settlement between warring groups, and secondly the installation of a good road system which will enable the speedy movement of patrols to any area within the valley, to keep law and order. This matter of roads will be dealt with more fully under Communications.

Buildings.

The following buildings of native materials were constructed in the course of the patrol; two barracks providing accommodation for twenty men, one large store building, a police mess, a lock-up and a rest house type structure. Several smaller structures of a lesser nature were also built for quarters for patrol carriers.

An excellent site for European accommodation has been chosen and cleared for erection of a dwelling for the O.I.C. It is at the head of the airstrip where aircraft will normally come to rest, and there is a fresh spring in the immediate surrounds, and some forty yards distant there is an excellent permanent stream.

The area should provide two housing sites and still leave sufficient room for an office and store in the general area, without cramping.

Land.

The people in the vicinity of the station have agreed to dispose of approximately 25 acres of land, and the airstrip and station are on this area. If possible I would like to obtain some further land on the approach end of the airstrip and on the southern side of the strip. The land is not being used by the owners , and it appears that they have no real need for the land if this area of a further twenty acres can be obtained then this should provide adequately for station expansion and will provide the station with natural boundaries on three sides. These natural boundaries are two small streams and the Nembi River which enclose the land, in a U -shaped formation.

However to date the people have been reluctant to dispose of the land and the station is at present confined to the Northerly side of the airstrip. On the very edge of the southerly side of the strip permission has been given to the Methodist Mission to erect a temporary building for their use pending such time as they are able to locate a site for their permanent station. This temporary building is located in the narrow fringe of land which it will be necessary to obtain from the natives to avoid infringement of air safety regulations which might occur through native development of the area and planting of trees which would grow above safety limitations.

Communications.

The general lie of the valley is suitable to the speedy development of roads suited to venicular traffic. It appears feasible to construct a road from Paberonga at the junction of the Nembi River with the Erave River, through the valley and across the Nembi- Wage divide to Margarima in the Wage area. At present these two point are approximately 16 hours walk distant over, fair inter-village tracks. With the introduction of graded roads this time should be cut to approximately 8 hours, and neither end more than six hours walk distant from NIPA station.

Communications continued

I would suggest that a tractor should be made available for this station as early as possible. This in addition to providing transport for patrol, would also be used for work on the extension of the airstrip, where it is estimated that at least 10,000 yards of earth must be moved to enable the airstrip to be developed to the fullest. This should make the airstrip approximately 2,400 feet in length then.

The tractor will also be necessary to haul in building materials and timbers for milling or pit sawing. If a small saw is put in then the tractor would also be used to power the mill. Timber suitable for sawing is located several miles from the station, and porterage for such a distance is a generally unsuitable method for such a purpose.

The airstrip has been completed to a total length of 1900 feet and has been approved by Civil Aviation for operation by light aircraft such as Cessna.

In the vicinity of PARERONGA it was noted that there are a number of areas thereabouts that could possibly be developed to make an airstrip there. From observations there appears to be a fairly heavy population in the area, and would possibly be attractive to a mission, as a future area for operations, and construction of an airstrip there.

POLICE. Seperate reports on police personel have been submitted.

I would recommend that for the first year that the detachment consist of 3 N.C.O. and twelve constables, effective strength. This would enable mounting of a twelve to fourteen man patrol, if necessary to intercede in inter-group fighting, and it seems rather probable that such intervention will be necessary before the people accept pacification as a general rule.

This figure of fifteen police does not allow for depletion of strength due leave or other exigencies.

STAFF. I am of the opinion that for the first six months of 1960, at least, that the development of the area would be greatly speeded by the stationing of a junior second officer, at this area.

This would enable pacification to be most effectively carried out, and still ensure of adequate supervision of station development, and satisfactory supervision of the road building projects, which will be radiating from the Nipa area.

J. Jordan

(J. JORDAN)
Assistant District Officer Gr.1

APPENDIX "B".

Health.

The patrol was accompanied by two Aid Post Orderlies, and they were adequate for the tasks involved.

The standard of work required of them was not very great as no major illness was found and they were only carrying out minor dressings etc. However it was also noted that they were very lax in such matters as sterilisation of instruments and asepsis of dressings.

When it was necessary for them to suture a wound it was noted that after they boiled the necessary implements, they carried them over in the tray to where the patient was, laid out all materials according to training, then dumped everything, instruments included, on the bare ground beside the patient, completely negating any value attained by the boiling of the instruments. !!

Health of thepeople of the area has, in respect of those people seen by the patrol, been good, to the eye of a layman.

M.M.O. ANANEL - Work appeared fair though subject to above remarks. ✓

A.P.O. KUMIA - Worked satisfactorily within his limitations, appeared to be more earnest in his application to his work than ANANEL. ✓

APPENDIX "C"

Interpreter PUNI. This man was attached to the patrol for its duration, but showed rather limited ability as an interpreter. He is willing enough, but does not appear to have the quality which is needed for a first class interpreter. His conduct was satisfactory. ✓

NEMBI RIVER PATROL
1955
AUGUST - DECEMBER

Scale 4 mls = 1"
1:250,000
PATROL ROUTE

TERRITORIAL BOUNDARY

PAPUA

141° EAST

5°45'

6°

142° 30'E

TULUM

MT HIBUEI (Local)

MT AREP

LAI RIVER

SUMBI

MENDI

MENDI RIVER

NEMBI

MESOR

KWIN

WATERFALL

KOL

EDERA

DEDENTEI VILLAGE AREA

WAGE RIVER

JIMPOM

UJIBIM 4,300

MT WILEM

PASSING

ERAVE RIVER

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA.

Introduction. The purpose of the patrol was to establish and consolidate an Administration Patrol Post in the Nembi River valley, of the Mendi Sub-District of the Southern Highlands. Extension and consolidation of Administration control of the area was also undertaken.

The area concerned has been visited by patrols on previous occasions, and the Administration was by no means unknown to the Nembi people, however no attempts had been made by earlier patrols to bring about pacification of the area, and the people of the area continued the way of life that has been their's since time immemorial.

Diary.
August.
Monday, 31st. Departed with eight police per Land Rover to Tulum where patrol stores have been concentrated. Settled in for night.

September.
Tuesday, 1st. Day spent breaking up stores into suitable carrier loads. Runner despatched to LAI Valley to MR. S. Markwell, P.O. requesting for carriers. Advice received that Mr. M. Brownridge, will be proceeding to Tulum tomorrow with some carriers.

Wednesday, 2nd. Mr. Brownridge and some carriers arrived at mid-day. Later Mr. M.Leon, A/ D.O. Mendi, arrived with Mr. R.N.Dessilly, A.D.O. Messrs. Leon and Brownridge returned to Mendi, Mr. Dessilly remaining Tulum to join the patrol.Mr. Dessilly accompanied by five police ex Komobe and Tari detachments.

Thursday, 3rd. Departed with 60 carriers to Mapelbol at 9.15 a.m. End of carrier line arrived at 1.45 p.m. Foods purchased.

Friday, 4th. Returned carriers to Tulum with police escort in morning. Mr. Dessilly and remainder of stores arrived at Mapelbol at 2.30 p.m.

Saturday, 5th. Twelve Nipa area natives visited the patrol taking with them upon their return a battery charger. Mr. S. Markwell, P.O. visited the patrol at p.m. Mr. Markwell brought eighteen carriers with him, and these and a number of Mapelbol carriers were despatched to Tulum to bring some further stores.

Sunday, 6th. Last of stores arrived. Of the 18 carriers brought by Mr. Markwell only four remain, remainder deserted.

Monday, 7th. Departed Mapelbol at 8.35 a.m. with 150 carriers, arriving at 2.30 p.m. Carriers very slow, camp made for night. Radio contact attempted with Mendi on portable transmitter. Reception satisfactory, transmission unreadable.

Tuesday, 8th. Departed Agenda in a.m. and after two hours over poor tracks arrived at the Nipa flats. Pitched camp.

Wednesday, 9th. Consolidated camp, approximately 150 locals assisting. Wireless contact made with Goroka , airdrop site cleared. 28 Mendi area carriers elected to remain Nipa, remainder returned to Mendi with police escort.

Thursday, 10th. Two airdrops received. 100% recovery. Mr. Dessilly did rough environment survey of probable airstrip site. At 5 p.m. a disturbance heard from nearby village. Later report received that a woman had been killed in an attack on the village. Foods purchased.

Friday, 11th. General clearing of station site and construction of a store commenced. Mr. Dessilly climbed nearby peak for mapping purposes.

Saturday, 12th. W Climbed nearby ridge from station for survey of lower valley area. Some men from Sobur area visited station and assisted in work. These people are the ones who have been fighting with the Agenda people, and caused the Agenda people to abandon the area that has been selected for the station.

September.
Sunday, 13th. No locals came in to work today, carrier line engaged in tree felling along drop site approach until mid-day.

Monday, 14th. Some local labour came forward and clearing continued. Mr. Dessilly measured out 1500 feet for initial light aircraft strip.

Tuesday, 15th. Approximately 400 local labour available today. Clearing N.E. end of strip.

Wednesday, 17th. 60 labour only came today, remainder have gone to pig-feast in Lai valley. Work commenced on strip surface today.

Thursday, 18th. Working on strip. Food purchases made.

Saturday, 20th. Strip work continued.

Sunday, 21st. Police escort and carriers sent to Mendi. Approximately 500 persons turned up to work today, but work hampered by lack of implements. Pulim group departed at 1 p.m. as they are going fighting tomorrow.

Monday, 21st. Routine strip work and camp construction carried out. At approximately 9 p.m. Pulim area was raided and one house burnt down.

Tuesday, 22nd. Agenda people who have been working on the airstrip went off to assist Pulim in fighting. One man killed. Station work continued as usual.

Wednesday, 23rd. Routine work; store completed. Airdrop of shovels and blankets received. Very few local labour available.

Thursday, 24th. Police returned ex Mendi with stores. Routine station work.

Friday, 25th. Routine strip and housing construction.

Saturday, 26th. Routine work. Radio contact made with Hagen.

Sunday, 27th. Small group of people came forward to work, remainder departed to fight.

Monday, 28th. Routine work. Further airdrop of stores received.

Tuesday, 29th. Routine strip work carried out. Now approximately 600 feet of strip has been prepared to date.

Wednesday, 30th. Routine strip work, commenced filling in of pond in centre of strip area.

October.
Thursday, 1st. Approximately 100 locals in to assist in work today.

Friday, 2nd. Routine strip work.

Saturday, 3rd. Routine strip construction.

Sunday, 4th. Carriers rested, local people came in to work. Trade supplies are almost exhausted. Police runners returned ex Mendi.

Monday, 5th. A few people only working today. Trade supplies finished.

Tuesday, 6th. Work ceased on strip, as no trade supplies available to pay local labour.

Wednesday, 7th. Small supply of cowrie shell dropped to the patrol ex Tari. sufficient for two days work payments.

October.
Thursday, 8th. Work proceeding on strip. In p.m. airdrop of salt received.

Friday, 9th. Routine strip work.

Saturday, 10th. Routine strip work; two airdrops of rations received. Fighting again heard from the Pulim area.

Sunday, 11th. Labour rested. A few locals worked for a short period until interrupted by heavy rains.

Monday, 12th. Routine work, trade supplies again low.

Tuesday, 13th. Work proceeded on strip.

Wednesday, 14th. Airdrop of trade received.

Thursday, 15th. Work continuing on strip.

Friday, 16th. Mr. Desailly and five police departed at 0630 hrs. on return to Koroba. Routine strip work continued.

Saturday, 17th. Routine strip work. In p.m. carrier line in ex Mendi, with two police reinforcements.

Sunday, 18th. Windsock erected at south-east end of the strip. Has now been no rain for ten days and fire hazard is very great. Burning off forbidden on station area.

Monday, 19th. Routine strip work continued.

Tuesday, 20th. Routine work, Timber gathering for construction of barracks.

Wednesday, 21st. Routine work; airdrop in p.m.

Thursday, 22nd. Routine strip work. Primary levelling of 1500 feet is now completed. The village people who have been assisting to date state that they are now going off to do their gardening and housing construction, which has suffered of late due to the incessant fighting prior to the advent of the patrol. People state that they will not be available for work for three months. District advised strip ready for inspection by D.C.A.

Friday, 23rd. A few people came in from Komia area for work, but did not desire to work at the tasks they were directed to. Informed that they would only come work if prepared to work where and as directed.

Saturday, 24th. Komia people again in today to work, but after a short period left their appointed tasks. Accordingly discontinued work with them.

Sunday, 25th. Patrol rested.

Monday, 26th. Working on strip surface, and roofing of police barracks.

Tuesday, 27th. Working on side drains of strip, and barracks.

Wednesday, 28th. Routine work proceeding.

Thursday, 29th. Routine work.

Friday, 30th. Barrack building now completed. The station now has the following structures: one steel, 32' x 16', which also provides sleeping quarters for an officer. One 22' x 16' rest house type structure, which serves as office and radio room, and further provides accomodation for a second officer. The new police barracks are 26'x 16', and a smaller structure has been made for the use of the carriers. In addition to these there are several smaller houses of 10' x 12' which houses patrol members. The present rest house structure will be suitable for married police accomodation when a residence is erected for the O.I.C. as it is in the barrack area. A site suitable for European occupancy has been selected at the N.W. end of the airstrip, where the aircraft will normally park and take off from.

October,
Saturday, 31st. Routine work on strip improving surfaces.

November,
Sunday, 1st. Patrol rested. Carriers and four police reinforcements arrived ex Mendi.

Monday, 2nd. Routine strip work. Airdrop received.

Tuesday, 3rd. Completed beds in police barracks.

Wednesday, 4th. Departed with eleven police for Komia at 0800 hours. Three police, and five other personnel left at station. Approximately 1½ hrs. to Komia, altitude 6,300' A.S.L. Thence up valley to Ugmail which is sited at the head of the Nembi fall on the Nembi - Wage divide. Arrived at 12.30 p.m. after walks along good tracks, altitude 6,400' A.S.L. Camp made and foods purchased, people friendly. This point appears to be half-way to Magerima. Terrain is fairly even to here and appears satisfactory further on to Magerima. Should be feasible to put in a vehicular road to here without great difficulty, and its probable extension to Magerima. Magerima is hidden from view from this point due to an intervening ridge, but it is possible to see some eight to ten miles towards Magerima over undulating terrain.

Thursday, 5th. Remained Ugmail. Group of people , 30 to 70, came forward to patrol. Talks with the people, foods purchased, and one pig. Firearms demonstration. Some of these people have visited Nipa during the stay of the patrol there.

Friday, 6th. Departed Ugmail at 0700 hrs. Walked along Wage fall to Ugun, approximately 1½ hrs. walk. This area is fairly heavily populated, and there is some inter-group fighting here. At present time the Ugmail people are just moving back to that area, which they had evacuated earlier due fighting. From Ugun walked back across Nembi divide, and after ½ hour arrived at Koia. Camped for night; to date tracks have been very good.

Saturday, 7th. Departed 0800 hrs passing through Karinj group. Altitude throughout this area is approximately 6,500' A.S.L. The area appears well-populated, and station is visible from this area. Descended to main valley floor to Ruapkibil, arriving at approximately 11 a.m. From this point the patrol moved on to Injip, arriving here at 12.30 p.m. Heavy fighting is in progress in this area at Kambijap. Patrol passed through the lines of the fighting villagers, skirting the actual skirmishing area. The fight is between the Injip and Pulim group on one side, supported by some Karinj people. The opposing group is made of SOA and NKIL people.

Leader of the Ebil shouted to patrol for it to return whence it came. Ignored this advice and proceeded to a small settlement and dancing ground some half mile to the rear of the fighting. After an hour or so made contact with a few people and moved on to an old garden site some 200 yards distant from the fighting. Time now approximately 3 p.m. Waited here for a further hour and filled in time with bathing in nearby stream, and which proved most refreshing after several days absence from such decent watering places. Eventually some men came forward and invited the patrol to come up to Sea village which is on the edge of the fighting, and make camp there. Made camp and established friendly relations with those people who came forward. Village provides excellent vantage point for view of fighting, which waxes and wanes over some 600 yards of terrain from this point. Over the area of the fighting houses and trees have been razed and gardens spoilt.

In the late afternoon the Injip people drove the Sea group of people off the contested land to within a hundred yards of the patrol. Fighting then ceased for the day. Talks were had with the Sea people and they were advised that I desired them to cease fighting and endeavour settle the dispute with compensatory payments, but people are adamant in that they want blood vengeance.

Sunday, 8th. In the morning large groups of natives were seen coming in to join in the fighting, some 4-500 were counted, who were going to join the Sea

people. Talks were held with a small group of people from the Ar River area, and a firearms demonstration was given. Later majority of people departed to fighting area, though some decided not to join in fighting on account of the presence of the patrol, and remained on the hillsides as spectators.

Decided that patrol would not intervene at this stage in fighting, unless considered absolutely necessary in the event of one group or other being completely overwhelmed by the other group, with possibility of casualties to women and children in the villages at rear of fighting area. I feel that it will serve the Administration long-range interests best, by refraining from patrol intervention in the fight, and endangering the newly established friendly relations with the people, by the possibility of a clash of force. I feel that such intervention should only be used when all groups of the valley have been contacted by the patrol, good relations established, and there be no possibility of the people mistaking the motives and intentions of patrols which intervene in such matters.

By 1030 a.m. the SOA group were pressing the attack heavily, and had advanced across the razed village area of the Kambijap group, and were endeavouring to obtain a foothold in the main defence point of the INJIP group some 100 yards distant. The groups were seperated by a small ravine across which the fighting waxed and waned. A further group of KAPINJ people had drawn into the fight at this stage to assist the INJIP people, and with their 70, total INJIP group is estimated at 300 men, with possibly 400 men on other side.

At this juncture I moved out of the camp with five police and an interpreter into the fighting area, remaining inside the lines of the SOA people. The front lines of the opponents were now only 150 feet apart, the INJIP group were fighting from the security of a casuarina stand of trees, and the SOA group from behind full length shields. However the attack was forced back and INJIP people made a sally, to endeavour regain area occupied by SOA group. Arrows started to fall about 40 feet to the side of the police party, where they were aimed at some SOA men, and I thought it wisest to withdraw the party lest a member be accidently injured. Neither side of the two fighting groups manifested any signs of hostility to the patrol, and I felt that the neutrality of the Administration had been firmly established in the minds of all groups concerned, and my talks to the people had indicated my disapproval of the fighting to them.

Following my appearance at the fighting area, several groups of those who were fighting decided to withdraw from the fighting. I felt that no further discouragement could be given without actual intervention, and this I was loath to do, so took a photograph of scene, and retired to camp area and watched fight continue from there.

Later in day, INJIP people attacked and forced SOA group back to outskirts of camp, where SOA people fought from security of wild cane clumps. At approximately 3p.m. a SOA man advanced under the protection of a shield to within arrow range of a group of INJIP supporters. He was some 5-600 feet distant from me and I watched closely for outcome, through binoculars. I saw an arrow speed from his bow into the midst of the INJIP people above him. A howl of dismay from the group gave out that a man had been seriously wounded with an arrow in the chest. There was one rather incongrous touch about this age old method of settling disputes, in that when the SOA man drew back his bowstring, I noticed that his right wrist with which he drew the bowstring and arrow, was encased in a Victoria Bitter beer can.

By about 4 p.m. the fighting had finished for the day, and four casualties had been suffered by the INJIP group, two of the men being seriously wounded.

Some people brought the patrol a pig which was purchased, and the police shot same with a volley demonstrating to the people the effectiveness of firearms. Further talks were held with the people and it was explained to a group of them that though the Administration was against warfare between groups, it did not mean

that a person should not take up arms to defend his family and property, but that they should not attack other people, and that they should endeavour to seek peaceful settlement of disputes and in this the Administration would assist, and would further protect persons who desired to live peacefully, from onslaughts by others. General talks on the benefits accruing from cessation of warfare, and opening of area to peaceful movement by transients etc. desirous of moving through areas to places of employment or medical care or schooling.

Four young men agreed to accompany the patrol back to NIPA and to visit Mendi. During the day only a few women were seen, but many young male children were present from ages of 9 years upward, and these were all armed with small bows suitable to their strength and accompanied their parents in the fighting.

Monday,9th. Departed 7 a.m. for NIPA, across scene of yesterday's fighting to ENJIP thence PULIM, and arrived at Nipa after 1 hr. 15 mins. pleasant walking.

Tuesday, 10th. Routine station work, levelling off of area in front of barracks and commencement of work on police mess.

Wednesday,11th. Routine work of station as of yesterday. Seven police forwarded to MENDI for pay, and large number of local natives who wish to visit MENDI and will carry back station supplies.

Thursday, 12th. Working on police kitchen.

Friday, 13th. Working on police kitchen and air-strip extension. Airdrop today.

Saturday, 14th. Working on airstrip extension.

Sunday, 15th. ENJIP people came in to assist on airstrip extension work. Strip is now 1600 feet length.

Monday, 16th. Improving strip surface.

Tuesday, 17th. Improving strip surface. Carriers returned ex Mendi.

Wednesday,18th. Routine station work.

Thursday, 19th. Walked through to KANELJAP with detail of police to escort the SCI/KEIL group of men who visited MENDI, back to their own area. Further fighting has been going on in the general area, though this time apparently the SOA and ENJIP people have made a temporary truce to give fight against a Lower NEMBI group of warriors. In p.m. district radio schedule; D.C. instructed patrol to remain at NIPA area pending D.C.A. inspection.

Friday, 20th. Clearing and levelling strip extension. Sounds of fighting heard from down the valley.

Saturday, 21st. Gathering materials for further buildings.

Sunday, 22nd. Patrol rested.

Monday, 23rd. Commenced second barracks. In p.m. advised Mendi that if D.C.A. not forthcoming, I desired to patrol to Lower NEMBI area.

Tuesday, 24th. Building barracks. Airstrip now cleared at approach end to 1700 feet, though only 1600 feet considered suitable for operations.

Wednesday, 25th. Despatched radio MENDI advising departing to patrol. Listened out to Mendi radio schedule at 0830 hours, and departed at 1030 to KEIL. Arrived at KEIL 1 hr. 30 mins. after leaving station. Talks with people. Slept night.

Thursday, 26th. Departed KEIL 0830 hrs. and moved along high ridges at approx. 6,500 feet altitude toward Lower NEMBI valley. Arrived at UJIKIA at 3.45 p.m. On occasion of visit by previous patrol this village showed hostile intentions,

towards the patrol. As the patrol approached the village, cries were heard, "Here come the people who killed our leaders". This was a reference to a small party of people from this area who went with a patrol to MENDI some years ago and were killed by a group of PAREHONGA people whilst returning to their homes. This is allegedly the basis of the resentment and hostility which the people of this area have shown to the Administration.

The patrol was met by approximately 70 men armed with axes. I opened conversation with them and assured the men that I desired to be friendly with them and desired to sleep the night at their village. I also advised the people that though the patrol wished to be friendly, it would strenuously resist any overt moves made against patrol personnel, and would resist any moves to force the patrol from the area. After a short period the people invited the patrol to the village proper, where a camp was made. Foods were purchased from the people, some talks were made and the people presented a much friendlier front toward the patrol. At these gatherings many of the men had discarded their arms, and women and children came forward.

Friday, 27th. Remained UJIMA consolidating relations with people. Firearms demonstration given to the people, and a very large quantity of foods purchased from the people. Many women and children present. Mail was dropped to the patrol and included a memo from the District Commissioner requesting immediate return of patrol to NIPA.

Saturday, 28th. Departed 0730 hrs. for TINDUM, thence KOL and ANIM. To AMBUR which is at lower edge of the gorge seperating Upper and Lower NEMBI areas. From there departed along sides of valley of AR River, a NEMBI tributary, which has its head-waters above NIPA station. Arrived at KUMANDA at 2 p.m. and made camp midst heavy rain. Walking has been generally good to date and road prospects from NIPA to PAREHONGA look good for vehicular movement.

Sunday, 29th. Departed at 0830 hrs. crossing AR River and climbing across hills; after 3 hours walking reached NIPA station, arriving at 11.30 a.m.

Monday, 30th. Routine station work continued with construction of buildings. In afternoon D.C. informed patrol to depart to KIP in the LAI River area to escort back Methodist Mission party.

December,
Tuesday, 1st. Departed at 0810 hrs. with two police for KIP, walking through heavy rain. Arrived KIP at 4.30 p.m. Rain still falling. In evening at 7 p.m. Revs. Young and Keightley arrived ex Mendi en route NIPA. Tracks poor.

Wednesday 2nd. Departed at 8 a.m. for NIPA with Methodist party, arriving NIPA at 5 p.m.

Thursday, 3rd. Departed with Revs. Young and Keightley on survey of general valley area vicinity of station. To IMAIP thence SUMPIKIBIL and KUALE thence returning to NIPA. Walking time 5 hours.

Friday, 4th. Rev. Young departed for MENDI via MAPENDOL and TULUM. Assisted Rev. Keightley with labour in clearing of temporary site by airstrip for erection of a building for use by him. Working on barracks also.

Saturday, 5th. Proceeding with work as of previous day.

Sunday, 6th. Patrol rested.

Monday, 7th. Commenced clearing of site for house of O.I.C. at top end of strip. Ten labourers assisting Methodist Mission gather cane for house roof.

Tuesday, 8th. Clearing continued.

Wednesday, 9th. All personnel engaged gathering timber for housing.

Thursday, 10th. Commenced construction of a lock-up.

December.
Friday, 11th. Police engaged working on lock-up. Labour levelling surface of airstrip where subsidence has occurred. In p.m. after parade for evening flag lowering ceremony, Const. Banjue informed N.C.O. that he would not take his turn as mess-cook and that he and MAKI, a close relative desired to be returned to Mendi. All police have been taking turns at mess-orderly for a day each and on several occasions both Banjue and Maki have failed to carry out their turn, accordingly a roster was made out by O.I.C. and they are both due for mess duty in the next week. In afternoon Banjue, Maki and several other police who have been living in a small hut, were instructed that they had to move into the proper barracks which had been newly constructed for them, and completed five days ago, and which they have not yet moved into. The small shelter they had been living in must be removed as it is on edge of airstrip. Informed that if they failed to leave the shelter and move into barracks this would be regarded as a direct disobeyal of a order. In evening observed that Constable's Banjue and Maki had made no attempt to move into proper barracks.

Saturday, 12th. In early morning Senior Constable came to my house and informed me that Constable Banjue and Maki had deserted in night taking all their equipment with them, and have presumably gone to Mendi. Conversation held on radio with D.O. Mendi informing him that the two members had gone A.W.L. N.C.O. reported that on previous evening when on parade he asked the members if they had any grievance or reason for desiring return to Mendi, they replied, " No; but we were told that we would only be on patrol for three months and it is over that now."

In late evening an overland party arrived ex Mendi, consisting of wives and families of Constable's Makalion and Kompian. State that they departed from Mendi without informing any persons, as some persons at Mendi barracks had been slandering them alleging loose morals in the absence of their husbands, so they decided to clear out from there.

Sunday, 13th. Patrol rested.

Monday, 14th. Labour working construction of look-up.

Tuesday, 15th. Civil Aviation Cessna aircraft landed with Senior Airport Inspector King and Mr. W. Guy. Also accompanying, Mr. K.Dyer, District Officer. Civil Aviation authorities requires lengthening of strip to 1900 feet prior to opening.

Wednesday, 16th. Mr. R.B. Creagh, C.P.O. arrived in a.m. per Cessna 170 aircraft, to assist on levelling of strip extension. Battery charger received also per same flight. Work commenced on strip extension. Rain in afternoon.

Thursday, 17th. Continued work on strip. My self and Mr. Keightley proceeded to FAMIA, approximately 1 hour 15 minutes walk away, and I endeavoured arrange for more labour to speed work on strip. Rain falling in afternoon.

Friday, 18th. Working on strip, rain delaying progress.

Saturday, 19th. Strip work proceeding, intermittent rain throughout day.

Sunday, 20th. Rain falling throughout day. Labour worked for approximately 3 hours putting in trenches for final levelling. Work abandoned after weather made further progress impossible.

Monday, 21st. Strip completed sufficient for opening, however closed due rainfall restrictions. Radio schedule with Mendi in p.m.. Mendi advise that airdrop which was scheduled last Thursday, and which was to supply needed trade items for payment of labour working on strip has failed to eventate as of yet due failure of Department of Civil Aviation to grant permission for an airdrop. Failure of this drop has further hampered completion of the necessary work required by Department of Civil Aviation.

December.

Tuesday, 22nd. 7 a.m. radio contact with Mendi unsuccessful, passed Strip weather report via Jimmi River radio. No airdrop, trade supplies very low. Villagers assisting in cambering of the parking area.

Wednesday, 23rd. Radio contact again unsatisfactory. No airdrop personal supplies are also exhausted. Carriers working on married quarters.

Thursday, 24th. Labour gathering timber for married quarters.

Friday, 25th. Christmas day. Rested.

Saturday, 26th. Labour working on married quarters.

Sunday, 27th. Rested.

Monday, 28th. At approximately 11 a.m. Mr. H. Morton of the Mission Aviation Fellowship landed in a Cessna 180 aircraft and passed information to Civil Aviation authorities that the strip was now serviceable for a ircraft for a full 1900 feet. Strip should now be approved by D.C.A. for normal commercial operation. Mr. Creagh and self proceeded to Mendi per the aircraft, and patrol completed.

Native Affairs.

Relations established with the people of the area, have to date been very good, and it is to be hoped that this steady progress will continue.

With the establishment of friendly contacts however, the role of the patrol, in the next six months will greatly change, for the normal work of law enforcement will ever increasingly be followed, and disagreement could occur between a patrol and a group of natives who might transgress the introduced Rule of Law.

There will be two primary tasks to follow in the New Year, firstly to bring out a peaceful settlement between warring groups, and secondly the installation of a good road system which will enable the speedy movement of patrols to any area within the valley, to keep law and order. This matter of roads will be dealt with more fully under Communications.

Buildings.

The following buildings of native materials were constructed in the course of the patrol; two barracks providing accommodation for twenty men, one large store building, a police mess, a lock-up and a rest house type structure. Several smaller structures of a lesser nature were also built for quarters for patrol carriers.

An excellent site for European accommodation has been chosen and cleared for erection of a dwelling for the O.I.C. It is at the head of the airstrip where aircraft will normally come to rest, and there is a fresh spring in the immediate surrounds, and some forty yards distant there is an excellent permanent stream.

The area should provide two housing sites and still leave sufficient room for an office and store in the general area, without cramping.

Land.

The people in the vicinity of the station have agreed to dispose of approximately 25 acres of land, and the airstrip and station are on this area. If possible I would like to obtain some further land on the approach end of the airstrip and on the southern side of the strip. The land is not being used by the owners, and it appears that they have no real need for the land if this area of a further twenty acres can be obtained then this should provide adequately for station expansion and will provide the station with natural boundaries on three sides. These natural boundaries are two small streams and the Nembi River which enclose the land, in a U -shaped formation.

However to date the people have been reluctant to dispose of the land and the station is at present confined to the Northerly side of the airstrip. On the very edge of the southerly side of the strip permission has been given to the Methodist Mission to erect a temporary building for their use pending such time as they are able to locate a site for their permanent station. This temporary building is located in the narrow fringe of land which it will be necessary to obtain from the natives to avoid infringement of air safety regulations which might occur through native development of the area and planting of trees which would grow above safety limitations.

Communications.

The general lie of the valley is suitable to the speedy development of roads suited to vehicular traffic. It appears feasible to construct a road from Paberonga at the junction of the Nembi River with the Erave River, through the valley and across the Nembi- Wage divide to Margarima in the Wage area. At present these two point are approximately 16 hours walk distant over, fair inter-village tracks. With the introduction of graded roads this time should be cut to approximately 8 hours, and neither end more than six hours walk distant from NIPA station.

Communications continued

I would suggest that a tractor should be made available for this station as early as possible. This in addition to providing transport for patrol, would also be used for work on the extension of the airstrip, where it is estimated that at least 10,000 yards of earth must be moved to enable the airstrip to be developed to the fullest. This should make the airstrip approximately 2,400 feet in length then.

The tractor will also be necessary to haul in building materials and timbers for milling or pit sawing. If a small saw is put in then the tractor would also be used to power the mill. Timber suitable for sawing is located several miles from the station, and portorage for such a distance is a generally unsuitable method for such a purpose.

The airstrip has been completed to a total length of 1900 feet and has been approved by Civil Aviation for operation by light aircraft such as Cessna.

In the vicinity of PANEROMA it was noted that there are a number of areas thereabouts that could possibly be developed to make an airstrip there. From observations there appears to be a fairly heavy population in the area, and would possibly be attractive to a mission, as a future area for operations, and construction of an airstrip there.

POLICE. Seperate reports on police personel have been submitted.

I would recommend that for the first year that the detachment consist of 3 N.C.O. and twelve constables, effective strength. This would enable mounting of a twelve to fourteen man patrol, if necessary to intercede in inter-group fighting, and it seems rather probable that such intervention will be necessary before the people accept pacification as a general rule.

This figure of fifteen police does not allow for depletion of strength due leave or other exigencies.

STAFF. I am of the opinion that for the first six months of 1960, at least, that the development of the area would be greatly speeded by the stationing of a junior second officer, at this area.

This would enable pacification to be most effectively carried out, and still ensure of adequate supervision of station development, and satisfactory supervision of the road building projects, which will be radiating from the Nipa area.

(J. JORDAN)
Assistant District Officer Gr.1

APPENDIX "E".

Health.

The patrol was accompanied by two Aid Post Orderlies, and they were adequate for the tasks involved.

The standard of work received of them was not very good as no major illness was found and they were only carrying out minor dressings etc. However it was also noted that they were very lax in such matters as sterilisation of instruments and carrying out dressings.

When it was necessary for them to suture a wound it was noted that after they boiled the necessary implements, they carried them over in the tray to where the patient was, laid out all materials according to training, then dropped everything, instruments included, on the bare ground beside the patient, completely negating any value obtained by the boiling of the instruments.

Health of the people of the area has, in respect of those people seen by the patrol, been good, to the eye of a layman.

L.R.O. AMBIL - Work approved fair though subject to above remarks.

A.P.O. KEMA - Worked satisfactorily within his limitations, appeared to be more earnest in his application to his work than AMBIL.

APPENDIX "F"

Interpreter KEMA. This man was attached to the patrol for its duration, but showed rather limited ability as an interpreter. He is willing enough, but does not appear to have the quality which is needed for a first class interpreter. His conduct was satisfactory.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORT

District of.....Southern Highlands..... Report No.....NIPO 2 of 59/60.....

Patrol Conducted by.....J.Jordan. A.D.O 1.....

Area Patrolled.....Nembi River, Southern Highlands.....

Patrol Accompanied by Europeans.....D. Butler P.O. 2.

Natives.....Fourteen R. P. & N. G. C.

Duration—From 19/..1.../19.60..to...2../..2.....19.60..

Number of Days.....Fifteen.....

Did Medical Assistant Accompany?.....No.....

Last Patrol to Area by—District Services...../..12./19.60..

Medical .... Nil.../...../19.....

Map Reference.....Lake Kutubu 4mil series , sketch map attached.

Objects of Patrol.....Ascertain population whereabouts and density.

extend Administration influence.

DIRECTOR OF DISTRICT SERVICES
AND NATIVE AFFAIRS,
PORT MORESBY.

Forwarded, please.

15/ 2 /1960 .....
District Commissioner

Amount Paid for War Damage Compensation .... £.....

Amount Paid from D.N.E. Trust Fund .... £.....

Amount Paid from P.E.D.P. Trust Fund .... £.....

67-15-29.

4th April, 1960.

District Officer,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

PATROL REPORT NIPA NO. 2/59-60.

It is unfortunate that the Lower Nembi and the South-Eastern WAGE-NEMBI Divide were isolated from the former KUTUBU-MENDI L. of C. Also patrols travelling MENDI-MURI missed this pocket of population. However, main routes cannot travel everywhere and the report indicates a reasonable attitude under the circumstances. It is still obvious that considerable patience will be necessary of the type shown by Mr. Jordan and his colleague, Mr. Butler.

Very useful information was obtained but it will be clear that future patrols will have to operate with due caution avoiding the temptation to divide the party in order to get quicker results. These people have waited a long time for the Queen's Peace but the safety of patrol personnel is a priority that takes precedence even over pacification.

Contact appears to have been good enough to ensure even better consolidation by the next patrol. Arrogance and insolence were the first impressions gained by early patrols of the people living in the country drained by the ERAVE and its tributaries.

(T.G. Aitchison)
Acting Director

67-15-89.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

In Reply
Please Quote

No. 30/1-735

"KWD:GTE"

DEPARTMENT OF NATIVE AFFAIRS
RECEIVED
24 FEB 1960

District Office,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

16th February, 1960.

The Director,
Department of Native Affairs,
Konedobu,
P A P U A.

PATROL REPORT NIPA NO.2 OF 1959/60

Attached hereto a report submitted by Mr. Jordan A.D.O. on his recent patrol of the Nembi River area, from Nipa.

Mr. Jordan's approach of winning over the allies of the UNJIBIA people prior to his visit there was sound and without the support of their allies I feel they are potentially now far less difficult.

I understand that it is quite true that several years ago a party of UNJIBIA natives came with a patrol to Mendi and that they were killed whilst returning. The next patrol to UNJIBIA should encourage some men to accompany it to Mendi and also return them. This I feel sure would have a good effect. By remaining in the area several days Messrs Jordan and Butler seem to have materially improved the situation. Over the area generally the native situation is quite pleasing and with anticipated regular patrolling I feel confident administration influence will be consolidated.

This was a very useful and well conducted patrol providing a sound basis for a further visit which I anticipate within three months. This visit should be made by two officers and a strong patrol as there could be trouble in both the UJTBIA and ARAMARA groups who cannot be considered trustworthy and who could very well take advantage of any sign of weakness.

(K. W. DYER)
District Officer

c.c. The Assistant District Officer,
MENDI.

The Patrol Officer-in-Charge,
NIPA.

"KWD:GIE" 30/1-735

District Office,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

16th February, 1960.

The Director,
Department of Native Affairs,
Konedobu,
P A P U A.

PATROL REPORT NIPA NO.2 OF 1959/60

Attached hereto a report submitted by Mr. Jordan A.D.O. on his recent patrol of the Nembi River area, from Nipa.

Mr. Jordan's approach of winning over the allies of the UNJIBIA people prior to his visit there was sound and without the support of their allies I feel they are potentially now for less difficult.

I understand that it is quite true that several years ago a party of UNJIBIA natives came with a patrol to Mendi and that they were killed whilst returning. The next patrol to UNJIBIA should encourage some men to accompany it to Mendi and also return them. This I feel sure would have a good effect. By remaining in the area several days Messrs Jordan and Butler seem to have materially improved the situation. Over the area generally the native situation is quite pleasing and with anticipated regular patrolling I feel confident administration influence will be consolidated.

This was a very useful and well conducted patrol providing a sound basis for a further visit which I anticipate within three months. This visit should be made by two officers and a strong patrol as there could be trouble in both the UNJIBIA and ARAMARA groups who cannot be considered trustworthy and who could very well take advantage of any sign of weakness.

(K. W. DYER)
District Officer

c.c. The Assistant District Officer,
MENDI.

The Patrol Officer-in-Charge,
NIPA.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA.

Introduction. The area patrolled is that which lies in a South Easterly direction from NIPA station and is bounded generally by the Nembi, Erave and Wage Rivers.

In the area visited all enquiries elucidated that at some time or other a patrol had passed across the area or within a reasonable distance of each seperate area, though some of the contacts appear to have been in the late thirties and were possibly the early patrols from Lake Kutubu; however it is difficult to attain an accurate estimate of when the first patrols went through the area. It is possible also to identify movements of later patrols, but these patrols all appear to have been merely en route to somewhere else and this present patrol was the first attempt to systematically determine the full extent and localities of the population in the area.

Diary.

January, 1960.
Tuesday, 19th. Departed at 1015 a.m. for EBIL with Mr. D.N. Butler, P.O. 11, and fourteen police, carriers and two Aid Post Orderlies, who acted, mainly, as interpreters to the patrol. Arrived after approximately 1 hr. 45 minutes easy walking. Camp made. En route camp passed through SOA hamlet, which has now been laid waste since my previous patrol. Some dozen people were sighted at the site, but moved off before patrol arrived. These men were guards against a surprise attack on the area by people of the INJIP group with whom they are at present fighting. Later in afternoon some 70 people visited patrol and talks were given to them. Particular emphasis been given that as the Administration would now be free to move around and stop all inter-group fighting, and that on the completion of the patrol all groups would have been contacted and advised of the aims of the Administration, should further outbreaks of fighting occur then action would be taken against the groups engaging in the fighting. Heavy rain in late afternoon.

Wednesday, 20th. Heavy rain falling in morning and departure delayed till 1000 a.m. Arrived at ENJUA at 1230 p.m. after several diversions from main route for climbing to vantage points for surveys of the area generally. Population quite heavy throughout this area which is an extension of the KARINJ people who live along the range dividing the Nembi from the Wage. Quite a large group of people came in to the patrol but extremely heavy downpour prevented any group talks with the people.

Thursday, 21st. In a.m. several hundred people came forward to the patrol, and talks were given to the people, and a firearms demonstration. Departed at 1000 a.m. and after four hours easy walk arrived at KARAMELA where camp was pitched and foods purchased.

Friday, 22nd. Talks with people and followed with firearms demonstration. 250 - 300 people came forward. At 2.30 p.m. with Mr. Butler and 3 police departed down valley to a prominent ridge and carried out mapping returning to camp at 4 p.m. A small quantity of foods purchased sufficient for carriers. Ceased buying foods as payment demanded by the people, and considering quality of food brought, made it unsatisfactory. Issued rice to remainder of patrol. There does not appear to be any shortage of foods amongst these people.

Saturday, 23rd. Departed at 7.45 a.m. for PUMBUREL arriving 9.45 a.m. Talks with people, followed by food purchases at which the people became rather arrogant and demanding. The people are still KARINJ people hereabouts which makes the KARINJ appear to be the major group of people.

Sunday, 24th. Departed at 745 a.m. for UBA arriving at 9.45 a.m. Time included diversionary trek up local feature for mapping purposes. Talks with people and food puchases. A satisfactory relationship achieved with local who are closely allied with the UJIBIA people on the Lower Nembi River.

January.

Monday, 25th. Departed down valley at 740 a.m. and crossed over ridge to the head of the EMIA River, made camp at TIBARAM area. The patrol is now in limestone pinnacle area, and the EMIA River disappears underground at this point. Approximately 130 people came forward to the patrol and talks were given to the people and later foods purchased. Contacts have been quite satisfactory to date. People have nowhere appeared alarmed at the approach of the patrol, and generally friendly toward us.

Tuesday, 26th. Departed at 745 for ARAMARA arriving at 1100 a.m. Camp made on nearby knoll and talks held with people. Some 60 people came forward to the patrol and food purchases were made. This area is on the Lower reaches of the EMIA River, where it reappears from the ground, and is fairly close to the Frave river, which can be seen from vantage points. There appear to be a large percentage of the population of this area who have not come forward to the patrol. When the patrol came down this area there was quite a lot of shouting in the ridges, and whatever the gist of the shouting was - the patrol was offered several divergent explanations, it was sufficient however to cause two of the carriers to desert. People seen appeared satisfactory in their demeanour toward the patrol if, albeit, wary.

Wednesday, 27th. Departed at 7.30 a.m. climbing out of valley to a hamlet above POPUMA near the NEMBI / ERAVE river confluence. From 9 a.m. till 1015 a.m. spent walking back toward this junction to determine details of this area. Carriers remained at hamlet with majority of police. Continued journey along NEMBI valley to URIA, and from here our guides mislead along tracks which arrived at the Faberenga Rest House. Rested here from 1330 to 1400 and after a further two hours walk, including 45 minutes spent fording flooded NEMBI River, arrived at UJIBLA. People here appeared to be extremely diffident toward the patrol. People informed that patrol desires to see them in the morning for talks, prior to moving on. No foods brought to patrol and rice issued.

Thursday, 28th. A group of men assembled, but no women and children, and men are only a proportion of those seen here on the occasion of the previous patrol. Large number of persons seen and heard in surrounding hamlets and encampments. Spokesmen for the men who had come forward, upon being asked where were all the rest of the people, said that there were no more people, and it was observed that a number of women were making up nearby ridges with their pigs and other treasured possessions. Upon being broached about these people again, the leader of the men made a number of obvious lies to the patrol in a most arrogant manner.

When a group of persons were approached by A.P.O. KUMLA and informed to come forward to hear the talk, one man menaced him with an axe but was disarmed before any injury occurred. Further attempts were made to get the people to come forward to the patrol, but only result was that the patrol was given ~~given~~ a rather juicy badinage of obscene comments, by persons who were sitting on nearby ridges. Later in afternoon myself and five police climbed nearby ridge and into adjoining valley, where a large group of these people live. People ran away up other side of valley. These people are not afraid of the Administration, as they only move out of close proximity to patrol personel to ensure that they have a good start should the patrol desire to apprehend them. They keep some 2-300 yards distant from the patrol. From time to time a small group of persons come into the village at UJIBLA, males only, and talk to the patrol, but later they drift away and are replaced by others. Cannot get a really satisfactory group together for talks.

Friday, 29th. Mr. Butler and small party moved out to adjoining hamlets and sent groups of people whom he contacted in, these people came in without escort, and in all some 120 persons gathered but upon return of Mr. Butler's party and whilst awaiting arrival of some women and children, group broke up and majority of the people claimed to be from other areas, and still numbers of people gathered are not considered satisfactory. A large number of the men were from URA.

In evening a number of persons returned to the area, and after obtaining assurances that they need have no fear, slept in the village area. A number of women and children could be heard in the houses, and some foods were purchased by patrol - a small amount only.

January.
Friday, 29th. (cont.) Men were again told that patrol desired to speak with a reasonable sized gathering of the people who normally congregate here for ceremonial occasions, and that they were to come forward in the morning.

Saturday, 30th. Some 80 or 90 men gathered around but a close check showed that only a very few were these people - that is UJIBIA people. They are keeping their distance and ignoring calls to come down and see the patrol. However as patrol has given no indication that it will depart prior to the people coming forward, I feel that some of them are wearying of the stay of the patrol and will come down shortly. Food supplies are getting low and I have only sufficient rations left to feed patrol for one more day, should no native foods be forthcoming. Though I think that I could buy sufficient native foods to help out, I am reluctant to call out for same, as I desire to leave to the area the thought that the patrol is self- sufficient, when it desires to be so, and that food purchases are normally acts of largesse by the patrol, to distribute trade to the people. I indicated this on my previous visit, and now appears a good time to operate on this principle.

Later in afternoon, definite signs of thaw on part of the local people shown, a number of men have asked if the patrol would be satisfied if the UJIBIA men only, all came forward. Informed them that this would be satisfactory, and also informed them that they know well from my previous visit that there is no fear of harm to anyone, providing that no attacks or threatening behaviour is made against the patrol personel. Also informed them that it is obvious that all people were safe with a patrol in the area, as evidenced by the number of their allied people, who had come forward and were at present around the UJIBIA area, and who had had satisfactory relations with the patrol.

In evening a large body of local men came to the camp, and brought a side of pig, which was purchased with a pearl shell. This was issued to the police and carriers, and I feel indicates that the people are willing to acquiesce to the patrol wishes and come forward and listen to the patrol and its talks. Prior to this on several occasions the patrol had been offered a pig - however it was to be on the understanding that the patrol would move on - I declined to accept the offer, and told the people that the patrol would move on, when, and only then, the people came forward freely to visit the patrol.

Sunday, 31st. In the morning, gradually a large group of people came forward and assembled. Approximately 120 men in the main group of whom half were of the UJIBIA line. Some thirty more people were gathered down the end of the village, and were from a nearby hamlet, however they moved off as soon as any attempt made to have them join the main line, but would drift back again within a few minutes. Talks were given to the people, and later a firearms demonstration. People were firmly instructed as to Administration aims and objectives, and it was brought home to them that they must fall into line with same. People were informed that a census compilation of the entire area would be commenced soon and it was expected that all persons were to come forward then; also explained that should people ~~come~~ ignore patrols, that in future effort would be undertaken to bring the people in to the patrol centre, and that should a patrol desire to bring people in for administrative purposes, then the patrol personel were quite capable of catching up with runaways.

Informed people that on this occasion, and on previous occasions the patrol had shown a large degree of forbearance toward these people, even in the face of openly hostile behaviour from these people, however should they show signs of recalcitrance in the future, then action would be taken against such individuals as evinced these mannerisms.

Whilst Mr. Butler carried out talks with the people I walked to the end of the village and made contact with the second group of people who would not join the main group. Showed them a number of photographs of themselves taken on previous visit; the people were quite friendly. However, when several curious police constables came up toward the area, the people started to go back into the garden area, out of their distance.

January.
Sunday, 31st. (cont.) Talks with the people were eventually completed, and after talks were made by the people, relations appeared to be back on a satisfactory basis, and people reasonably friendly toward the patrol. One spokesman stated that they were the last corner of the area, to get effective Administration and though they were aware of patrols, police and Europeans, nevertheless their experience had been very fleeting and their only real attempt at contact, had resulted in the party who went to Mendi being killed by other natives, on their return journey from Mendi, some years ago. However they now realised that the Administration patrols, were not objects which could be easily forced out of an area, or were so weak as to fall prey to attacks by villagers.

On this occasion no attempt was made to get a party of men to come to NIPA and go to Mendi. Reason for this decision was that it may be several months before a patrol gets back to this area, and any people taken out of the area, might grow homesick and attempt to make their own way back to the village, and should any of them die on route from any cause whatsoever the results could seriously impede Administrative progress in this area.

I recommend that the next patrol to this area, should induce a party of men to accompany it to Mendi, and they be returned by the same patrol. The distance to Mendi is only 8 hours walk, and would not unduly inconvenience the patrol, or cause any great and unnecessary digression from the normal scheme of a patrol.

Following the talks, and an apparently satisfactory relation with the people being attained, camp was broken and patrol moved on to KWIM. With a heavy river fording, which took over an hour, days walk was of four hours duration. Rain falling after mid-day and arrived at KWIM at 3 p.m. Many people absent at "Tamburan" feast near where patrol visited made river fording. This area was visited by myself and small party of police, and talk made to the people that I desired them to come to the patrol camp in the morning. Some people came to camp area, and a reasonable amount of foods were purchased by Mr. Butler, during my absence.

February
Monday, 1st. Approximately 130 persons came forward and routine talks with the people made. Departed 10 a.m. for EBIL arriving EBIL at 2.15p.m. Large group of people came forward, foods purchased and warning reiterated that no further outbreaks of fighting would be tolerated.

Tuesday, 2nd. Departed EBIL via INJUI, and here spoke to people informing them that action would be taken against any persons fighting. Arrived at NIPA after 1 hour 45 minutes walk.

Patrol Completed.

Native Affairs. The general area encompassed by the patrol would possibly contain 5,000 people. This is only an estimate, but in all approximately 2,000 persons were actually seen by the patrol.

As these people are concentrated in a relatively small area, I do not think that the task of bringing about pacification would be difficult. They do not appear to have large areas of terrain over which they may move, and though in the lower Southern end, the terrain is very rugged, nevertheless good tracks go through the area at reasonable gradients.

The attitude of the people in the Southern end, though it left much for the asking on some occasions, was satisfactory from an early patrolling viewpoint. The manner of the UJIBIA people was, I think, a token show of disapproval of the Administration, for these people have on occasion uttered many threats, and as they appear to be quite a powerful group with a very high opinion of their own prowess as fighting men, they are loth to accept the fact that a more powerful element than themselves has arrived. Though several members of the patrol were menaced with axes by people, and without cause, I do not think that these menaces were other than token resistance, and on these occasions the persons were easily disarmed without harm being occasioned by them.

I suspect that the large number of allied natives of the UJIBIA people who gathered at the area, were there to watch the fun, and see in what manner the UJIBIA people would extricate themselves from the mesh of threats that they had uttered, as to what they would do to the patrol when it arrived. Normally the UJIBIA people are assisted by these people, and it is in them that the group strength lay. However the patrol had contacted all these people, and made friendly relations with them, and further firmly impressed them as to the strength of the patrol, should incident be made against it.

In my report of the occasion of my previous visit to UJIBIA, I stated that though the contacts had been satisfactory with them, I regarded them as being a people to be treated with caution, and I am still of this opinion. I consider it extemely unlikely that they would risk a clash with a normal patrol which was on it's guard, however the people might pluck up sufficient courage to attempt an attack on a small, unsuspecting party of travellers, should a suitable opportunity arise.

I do not regard the contacts which were made at ARAMARA area as being entirely satisfactory either. The people seen by the patrol were very friendly, and I have no qualms re their behaviour. However in the area between the EMIA River and the WAGE River, towards the ERAVE boundary, I feel that many people held back from coming to the patrol, and are possibly hostile towards the Administration. It is to be hoped that the contacts at ARAMARA will overcome this latent hostility, and that the next patrol will find a better reception, and I recommend that it moves thoroughly over this area.

Roads & Airfields. This patrol has borne out my previous opinion that the area will prove easy for the construction of vehicular roads. There appear to be few obstacles to vehicular roads being put in following the patrol route in the main. Such roads should greatly assist in the pacification of the area.

In the area traversed, watch was kept for suitable airstrip sites, and a rough examination was made of the Paberonga area, in which, a Mendi patrol expressed an opinion that a suitable airstrip site existed. There appears to be a possibility for small airstrips suitable Mission operations, in the area, but for anything larger, the sites are wrongly orientated, and face toward natural hazards, such as hills or rising gradients on take-off and would be unsuitable.

The only site seem which might offer possibilities was along the Nembi River at TINDOM. There a flat exists which appears to have been an old flood plain. A thorough survey would be necessary of the area to ensure that it is not subject to flooding, and secondly that it can be well drained, with a sufficiently lowered water table to have continual operations. Should these requirements be met, there appears to be a fairly good length of strip

with good approaches running along the valley.

Station Sites. Nipa still appears to have been the best choice for a station site in the Nembi area, being reasonably central, and having an excellent water supply and sufficient ground, combined with an airstrip that could be opened with a minimum of capital expenditure, and it seems to have fair possibilities to extension, upon hard surfacing for medium aircraft.

The centre of population would appear to start about eight miles below Nipa, and extend down toward the Erave boundary. The population in the vicintiy of Nipa and back toward the Northern boundary is not as heavily concentrated, but is evenly spread over the area.

Should the ai field site near TINDOM prove satisfactory, this area also would possibly make a suitable station site, but in any event this area with good roads it would be no more than approximately twelve miles from the present station. Whether the TINDOM site would be suitable for heavy aircraft, is also debatable and would, as mentioned earlier, be subject to an extensive investigation.

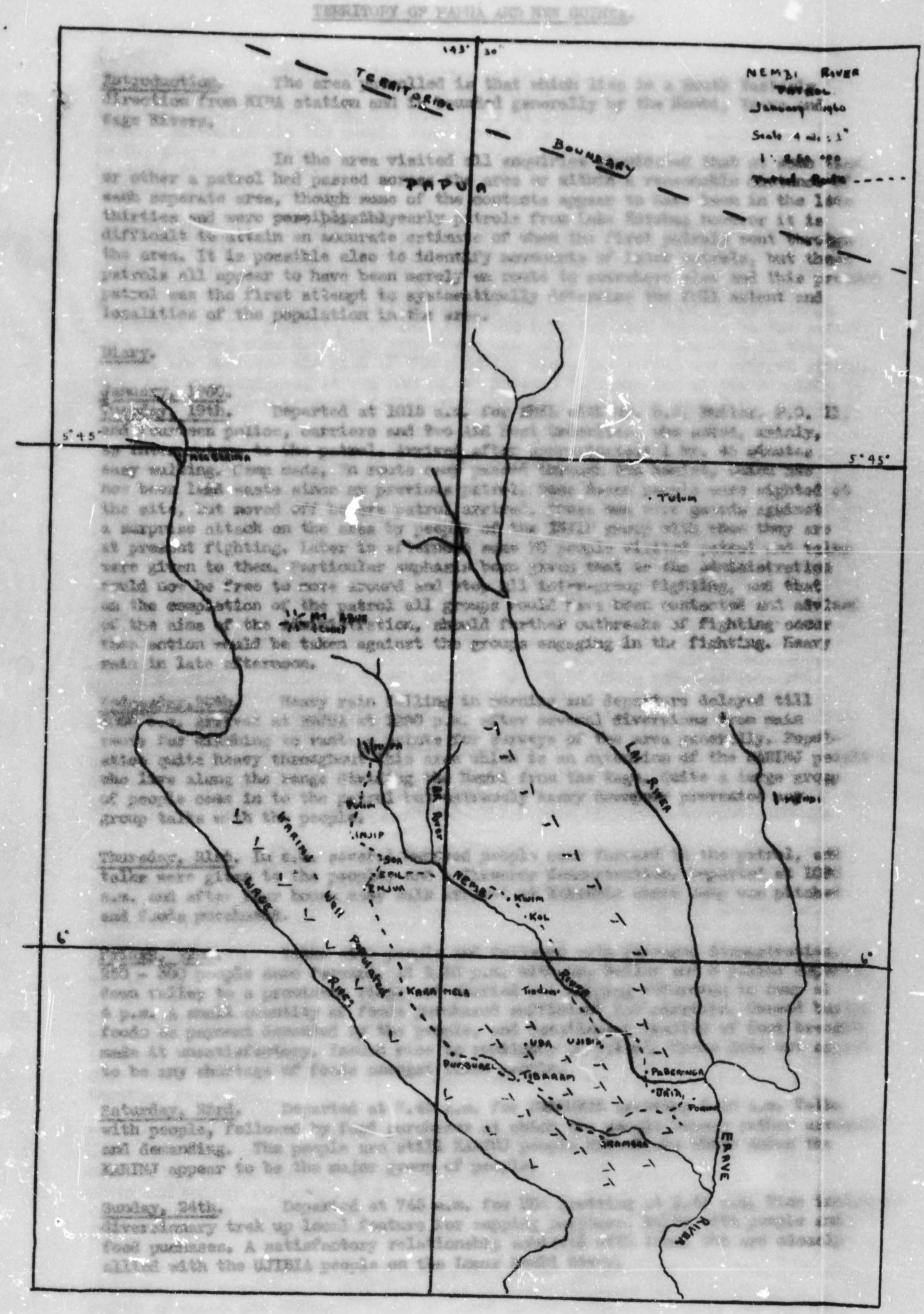
Due to the apparent ease with which it should prove possible to put through vehicular roads, then unless it is regarded as being essential for a larger airstrip, than that possible at NIPA; or that NIPA might be too close to its Northern boundary, should an Officer be stationed at MAGARIMA at some future date, NIPA would probably be suitable as a permanent Patrol Post.

Concluding Remarks. With this patrol this Officer has carried out a fairly complete coverage of the Nembi valley and surrounds, and it appears probable that total population is approximately 8,000 on first estimates. This does not take into consideration people past the end of the Nembi/Wage divide toward MAGARIMA, which area if patrolled from here could considerably increase the population . At present the estimate includes people within four hours patrol walk from the station, in the Northerly direction towards MAGARIMA.

Due the compact nature of the groups generally, I am of the opinion that this is an easy area for patrolling purposes, and with the installation of communication roads of good standard, an Officer from NIPA could easily handle more work than will be found in the NEMBI area itself, at this stage of development by the people. If the Officer is to remain based at NIPA present indications intimate that he could effectively patrol the Wage area toward MAGARIMA, though this might entail a revision of sub-district boundaries, and inclusion of the small area in that general area that at present is technically administered from Lake Kutubu.

J. Jordan

(J. Jordan.)
A.D.O. 1.



Introduction. The area patrolled is that which lies in a south [illegible] direction from KUTA station and [illegible] generally by the Nembi, Wage Rivers.

In the area visited all [illegible] or other a patrol had passed [illegible] each separate area, though some of the contacts appear to [illegible] thirties and were presumably yearly patrols from Lake Kutubu, however it is difficult to ascertain an accurate estimate of when the first patrols went [illegible] the area. It is possible also to identify movements of later patrols, but the patrols all appear to have been merely en route to somewhere else and this patrol was the first attempt to systematically determine the full extent and localities of the population in the area.

Diary.

January, 1940.

Friday, 19th. Departed at 1015 a.m. for [illegible] P.O. 12 [illegible] Kutubu police, carriers and two [illegible] the area, arrived, by [illegible] 5°45' [illegible] 5°45'
[illegible] many walking. Camp made. En route [illegible] were sighted at the site, but moved off before patrol arrived. [illegible] a surprise attack on the area by people of the [illegible] at present fighting. Later in afternoon [illegible] were given to them. Particular emphasis [illegible] could now be free to move around and stop all [illegible] on the completion of the patrol all groups would have been contacted and advised of the aims of the [illegible], should further outbreaks of fighting occur then action would be taken against the groups engaging in the fighting. Heavy rain in late afternoon.

Saturday, 20th. Heavy rain falling in morning and departure delayed till [illegible] arrived at KUTA at 1040 a.m. After several diversions from main route for [illegible] to visit various groups of the area generally. Population quite heavy throughout [illegible] who live along the range [illegible] Nembi from the [illegible] quite a large group of people came in to the patrol [illegible] heavy downpour of rain. [illegible] group talks with the people.

Thursday, 21st. In [illegible] people were [illegible] the patrol, and talks were given to the people [illegible] arrived at KOL [illegible] a.m. and after [illegible] and food purchased.

Friday, 22nd. [illegible] 250 - 300 people [illegible] down valley to a [illegible] 4 p.m. A small quantity of food [illegible] food in payment [illegible] made it unsatisfactory. [illegible] to be any shortage of food [illegible]

Saturday, 23rd. Departed at [illegible] with people, followed by [illegible] and descending. The people are still [illegible] KARINJ appear to be the major [illegible]

Sunday, 24th. Departed at 745 a.m. for [illegible] diversionary trek up local features for supplies [illegible] people are food purchases. A satisfactory relationship [illegible] are closely allied with the UJIBIA people on the Lower Nembi River.

Introduction. The area patrolled is that which lies in a South Easterly direction from NI'A station and is bounded generally by the Nembi, Erave and Wage Rivers.

In the area visited all enquiries elucidated that at some time or other a patrol had passed across the area or within a reasonable distance of each seperate area, though some of the contacts appear to have been in the late thirties and were ~~perciptously~~ yearly patrols from Lake Kutubu; however it is difficult to attain an accurate estimate of when the first patrols went through the area. It is possible also to identify movements of later patrols, but these patrols all appear to have been merely en route to somewhere else and this present patrol was the first attempt to systematically determine the full extent and localities of the population in the area.

Diary.

January, 1960.
Tuesday, 19th. Departed at 1015 a.m. for MBIL with Mr. D.N. Butler, P.O. II, and fourteen police, carriers and two Aid Post Orderlies, who acted, mainly, as interpreters to the patrol. Arrived after approximately 1 hr. 45 minutes easy walking. Camp made. En route camp passed through SOA hamlet, which has now been laid waste since my previous patrol. Some dozen people were sighted at the site, but moved off before patrol arrived. These men were guards against a surprise attack on the area by people of the KUJIP group with whom they are at present fighting. Later in afternoon some 70 people visited patrol and talks were given to them. Particular emphasis been given that as the Administration would now be free to move around and stop all inter-group fighting, and that on the completion of the patrol all groups would have been contacted and advised of the aims of the Administration, should further outbreaks of fighting occur then action would be taken against the groups engaging in the fighting. Heavy rain in late afternoon.

Wednesday, 20th. Heavy rain falling in morning and departure delayed till 1000 a.m. Arrived at KUJUA at 1230 p.m. after several diversions from main route for climbing to vantage points for surveys of the area generally. Population quite heavy throughout this area which is an extension of the KARINJ people who live along the range dividing the Nembi from the Waga. Quite a large group of people came in to the patrol but extremely heavy downpour prevented any group talks with the people.

Thursday, 21st. In a.m. several hundred people came forward to the patrol, and talks were given to the people, and a firearms demonstration. Departed at 1030 a.m. and after four hours easy walk arrived at KARAMNJ. where camp was pitched and foods purchased.

Friday, 22nd. Talks with people and followed with firearms demonstration. 250 - 300 people came forward. At 2.30 p.m. with Mr. Butler and 3 police departed down valley to a prominent ridge and carried out mapping returning to camp at 4 p.m. A small quantity of foods purchased sufficient for carriers. Ceased buying foods as payment demanded by the people, and considering quality of food brought, made it unsatisfactory. Issued rice to remainder of patrol. There does not appear to be any shortage of foods amongst these people.

Saturday, 23rd. Departed at 7.45 a.m. for PUMBUREL arriving 9.45 a.m. Talks with people, followed by food purchases at which the people became rather arrogant and demanding. The people are small KARINJ people hereabouts which makes the KARINJ appear to be the major group of people.

Sunday, 24th. Departed at 745 a.m. for UBA arriving at 9.45 a.m. Time included diversionary trek up local feature for mapping purposes. Talks with people and food puchases. A satisfactory relationship achieved with local who are closely allied with the UJIBIA people on the Lower Nembi River.

January.
Monday, 25th. Departed down valley at 740 a.m. and crossed over ridge to the head of the EMIA River, made camp at TIHARAM area. The patrol is now in limestone pinnacle area, and the EMIA River disappears underground at this point. Approximately 130 people came forward to the patrol and talks were given to the people and later foods purchased. Contacts have been quite satisfactory to date. People have nowhere appeared alarmed at the approach of the patrol, and generally friendly toward us.

Tuesday, 26th. Departed at 745 for ARAMAPA arriving at 1100 a.m. Camp made on nearby knoll and talks held with people. Some 60 people came forward to the patrol and food purchases were made. This area is on the Lower reaches of the EMIA River, where it reappears from the ground, and is fairly close to the Erave river, which can be seen from vantage points. There appear to be a large percentage of the population of this area who have not come forward to the patrol. When the patrol came down this area there was quite a lot of shouting in the ridges, and whatever the gist of the shouting was - the patrol was offered several divergent explanations, it was sufficient however to cause two of the carriers to desert. People seen appeared satisfactory in their demeanour toward the patrol if, albeit, wary.

Wednesday, 27th. Departed at 7.30 a.m. climbing out of valley to a hamlet above POROMA near the NEMBI / ERAVE river confluence. From 9 a.m. till 1015 a.m. spent walking back toward this junction to determine details of this area. Carriers remained at hamlet with majority of police. Continued journey along NEMBI valley to URIA, and from here our guides misled along tracks which arrived at the Paberunga Rest House. Rested here from 1330 to 1400 and after a further two hours walk, including 45 minutes spent fording flooded NEMBI River, arrived at UJIBIA. People here appeared to be extremely diffident toward the patrol. People informed that patrol desires to see them in the morning for talks, prior to moving on. No foods brought to patrol and rice issued.

Thursday, 28th. A group of men assembled, but no women and children, and men are only a proportion of those seen here on the occasion of the previous patrol. Large number of persons seen and heard in surrounding hamlets and encampments. Spokesmen for the men who had come forwarded, upon being asked where were all the rest of the people, said that there were no more people, and it was observed that a number of women were making up nearby ridges with their pigs and other treasured possessions. Upon being broached about these people again, the leader of the men made a number of obvious lies to the patrol in a most arrogant manner.

When a group of persons were approached by A.P.O. KUMIA and informed to come forward to hear the talk, one man menaced him with an axe but was disarmed before any injury occurred. Further attempts were made to get the people to come forward to the patrol, but only result was that the patrol was given a rather juicy badinage of obscene comments, by persons who were sitting on nearby ridges. Later in afternoon myself and five police climbed nearby ridge and into adjoining valley, where a large group of these people live. People ran away up other side of valley. These people are not afraid of the Administration, as they only move out of close proximity to patrol personel to ensure that they have a good start should the patrol desire to apprehend them. They keep some 2-300 yards distant from the patrol. From time to time a small group of persons come into the village at UJIBIA , males only, and talk to the patrol, but later they drift away and are replaced by others. Cannot get a really satisfactory group together for talks.

Friday, 29th. Mr. Butler and small party moved out to adjoining hamlets and sent groups of people whom he contacted in, these people came in without escort, and in all some 120 persons gathered but upon return of Mr. Butler's party and whilst awaiting arrival of some women and children, group broke up and majority of the people claimed to be from other areas , and still numbers of people gathered are not considered satisfactory. A large number of the men were from UBA.

In evening a number of persons returned to the area, and after obtaining assurances that they need have no fear, slept in the village area. A number of women and children could be heard in the houses, and some foods were purchased by patrol - a small amount only.

January.
Friday, 29th. (cont.) Men were again told that patrol desired to speak with a reasonable sized gathering of the people who normally congregate here for ceremonial occasions, and that they were to come forward in the morning.

Saturday, 30th. Some 80 or 90 men gathered around but close check showed that only a very few were these people - that is UJIBIA people. They are keeping their distance and ignoring calls to come down and see the patrol. However as patrol has given no indication that it will depart prior to the people coming forward, I feel that some of them are wearying of the presence of the patrol and will come down shortly. Food supplies are getting low and I have only sufficient rations left to feed patrol for one more day, should no native foods be forthcoming. Though I think that I could buy sufficient foods to help out, I am reluctant to call out for same, as I desire to impart to the area the thought that the patrol is self- sufficient, when it desires to be so, and that food purchases are normally acts of largesse by the patrol, to distribute trade to the people. I indicated this on my previous visit, and now appears a good time to operate on this principle.

Later in afternoon, definite signs of thaw on part of the local people shown, a number of men have asked if the patrol would be satisfied if the UJIBIA men only, all came forward. Informed them that this would be satisfactory, and also informed them that they know well from my previous visit that there is no fear of harm to anyone, providing that no attacks or threatening behaviour is made against the patrol personel. Also informed them that it is obvious that all people were safe with a patrol in the area, as evidenced by the number of their allied people, who have come forward and were at present around the UJIBIA area, and who had had satisfactory relations with the patrol.

In evening a large body of local men came to the camp, and brought a side of pig, which was purchased with a pearl shell. This was issued to the police and carriers, and I feel indicates that the people are willing to acquiesce to the patrol wishes and come forward and listen to the patrol and its talks. Prior to this on several occasions the patrol had been offered a pig - however it was to be on the understanding that the patrol would move on - I declined to accept the offer, and told the people that the patrol would move on, when, and only then, the people came forward freely to visit the patrol.

Sunday, 31st. In the morning, gradually a large group of people came forward and assembled. Approximately 120 men in the main group of whom half were of the UJIBIA line. Some thirty more people were gathered down the end of the village, and were from a nearby hamlet, however they moved off as soon as any attempt made to have them join the main line, but would drift back again within a few minutes. Talks were given to the people, and later a firearms demonstration. People were firmly instructed as to Administration aims and objectives, and it was brought home to them that they must fall into line with same. People were informed that a census compilation of the entire area would be commenced soon and it was expected that all persons were to come forward then; also explained that should people come ignore patrols, that in future effort would be undertaken to bring the people in to the patrol centre, and that should a patrol desire to bring people in for administrative purposes, then the patrol personel were quite capable of catching up with runaways.

Informed people that on this occasion, and on previous occasions the patrol had shown a large degree of forbearance toward these people, even in the face of openly hostile behaviour from these people, however should they show signs of recalcitrance in the future, then action would be taken against such individuals as evinced these mannerisms.

Whilst Mr. Butler carried out talks with the people I walked to the end of the village and made contact with the second group of people who would not join the main group. Showed them a number of photographs of themselves taken on previous visit; the people were quite friendly. However, when several curious police constables came up toward the area, the people started to go back into the garden area, out of their distance.

January.
Sunday, 31st. (cont.) Talks with the people were eventually completed, and after talks were made by the people, relations appeared to be back on a satisfactory basis, and people reasonably friendly toward the patrol. One spokesman stated that they were the last corner of the area, to get effective Administration and though they were aware of patrols, police and European, nevertheless their experience had been very fleeting and their only real attempt at contact, had resulted in the party who went to Mendi being killed by other natives, on their return journey from Mendi, some years ago. However they now realised that the Administration patrols, were not objects which could be easily forced out of an area, or were so weak as to fall prey to attacks by villagers.

On this occasion no attempt was made to get a party of men to come to KIPA and go to Mendi. Reason for this decision was that it may be several months before a patrol gets back to this area, and any people taken out of the area, might grow homesick and attempt to make their own way back to the village, and should any of them die en route from any cause whatsoever the results could seriously impede Administrative progress in this area.

I recommend that the next patrol to this area, should induce a party of men to accompany it to Mendi, and they be returned by the same patrol. The distance to Mendi is only 8 hours walk, and would not unduly inconvenience the patrol, or cause any great and unnecessary digression from the normal scheme of a patrol.

Following the talks, and an apparently satisfactory relation with the people being attained, camp was broken and patrol moved on to KWIL. With a heavy river fording, which took over and hour, days walk was of four hours duration. Rain falling after mid-day and arrived at KWIL at 3 p.m. Many people absent at "Tambaran" feast near where patrol existed made river fording. This area was visited by myself and small party of police, and talk made to the people that I desired them to come to the patrol camp in the morning. Some people came to camp area, and a reasonable amount of foods were purchased by Mr. Butler, during my absence.

February
Monday, 1st. Approximately 130 persons came forward and routine talks with the people made. Departed 10 a.m. for KWIL arriving KWIL at 2.15p.m. Large group of people came forward, foods purchased and warning reiterated that no further outbreaks of fighting would be tolerated.

Tuesday, 2nd. Departed KWIL via KWIP, and here spoke to people informing them that action would be taken against any persons fighting. Arrived at KIPA after 1 hour 45 minutes walk.

Patrol Completed.

Native Affairs. The general area encompassed by the patrol would possibly contain 5,000 people. This is only an estimate, but in all approximately 2,000 persons were actually seen by the patrol.

As these people are concentrated in a relatively small area, I do not think that the task of bringing about pacification would be difficult. They do not appear to have large areas of terrain over which they may move, and though in the lower Southern end, the terrain is very rugged, nevertheless good tracks go through the area at reasonable gradients.

The attitude of the people in the Southern end, though it left much for the asking on some occasions, was satisfactory from an early patrolling viewpoint. The manner of the UJIBIA people was, I think, a token show of disapproval of the Administration, for these people have on occasion uttered many threats, and as they appear to be quite a powerful group with a very high opinion of their own prowess as fighting men, they are loth to accept the fact that a more powerful element than themselves has arrived. Though several members of the patrol were menaced with axes by people, and without cause, I do not think that these menaces were other than token resistance, and on these occasions the persons were easily disarmed without harm being occasioned by them.

I suspect that the large number off allied natives of the UJIBIA people who gathered at the area, were there to watch the fun, and see in what manner the UJIBIA people would extricate themselves from the mesh of threats that they had uttered, as to what they would do to the patrol when it arrived. Normally the UJIBIA people are assisted by these people, and it is in them that the group strength lay. However the patrol had embraced all these people, and made friendly relations with them, and further firmly impressed them as to the strength of the patrol, should incident be made against it.

In my report of the occasion of my previous visit to UJIBIA, I stated that though the contacts had been satisfactory with them, I regarded them as being a people to be treated with caution, and I am still of this opinion. I consider it extemely unlikely that they would risk a clash with a normal patrol which was on it's guard, however the people might pluck up sufficient courage to attempt an attack on a small, unsuspecting party of travellers, should a suitable opportunity arise.

I do not regard the contacts which were made at ARAMBA area as being entirely satisfactory either. The people seen by the patrol were very friendly, and I have no qualms re their behaviour. However in the area between the EMIA River and the WAGE River, towards the MELVE boundary, I feel that many people held back from coming to the patrol, and are possibly hostile towards the Administration. It is to be hoped that the contacts at ARAMBA will overcome this latent hostility, and that the next patrol will find a better reception, and I recommend that it moves thoroughly over this area.

Roads & Airfields. This patrol has borne out my previous opinion that the area will prove easy for the construction of vehicular roads. There appear to be few obstacles to vehicular roads being put in following the patrol route in the main. Such roads should greatly assist in the pacification of the area.

In the area traversed, watch was kept for suitable airstrip sites, and a rough examination was made of the Paberonga area, in which, a Mendi patrol expressed an opinion that a suitable airstrip site existed. There appears to be a possibility for small airstrips suitable Mission operations, in the area, but for anything larger, the sites are wrongly orientated, and face toward natural hazards, such as hills or rising gradients on take-off and would be unsuitable.

The only site seen which might offer possibilities was along the Nembi River at TINDOM. There a flat exists which appears to have been an old flood plain. A thorough survey would be necessary of the area to ensure that it is not subject to flooding, and secondly that it can be well drained, with a sufficiently lowered water table to have continual operations. Should these requirements be met, there appears to be a fairly good length of strip

with good approaches running along the valley.

Station Sites. Nipa still appears to have been the best choice for a Station site in the Nembi area, being reasonably central, and having an excellent water supply and sufficient ground, combined with an airstrip that could be opened with a minimum of capital expenditure, and it seems to have fair possibilities to extension, upon hard surfacing for medium aircraft.

The centre of population would appear to start about eight miles below Nipa, and extend down toward the Kewe boundary. The population in the vicintiy of Nipa and back toward the Northern boundary is not as heavily concentrated, but is evenly spread over the area.

Should the airfield site near TENDON prove satisfactory, this area also would possibly make a suitable station site, but in any event this area with good roads it would be no more than approximately twelve miles from the present station. Whether the TENDON site would be suitable for heavy aircraft, is also debatable and would, as mentioned earlier, be subject to an extensive investigation.

Due to the apparent ease with which it should prove possible to put through vehicular roads, then unless it is regarded as being essential for a larger airstrip, than that possible at NIPA or that NIPA might be too close to its Northern boundary, should an Officer be stationed at [redacted] at some future date, NIPA would probably be suitable as a permanent Patrol Post.

Concluding Remarks. With this patrol this Officer has carried out a fairly complete coverage of the Nembi valley and surrounds, and it appears probable that total population is approximately 8,000 on first estimates. This does not take into consideration people past the end of the Nembi/Wage divide toward MAGARIMA, which area if patrolled from here could considerably increase the population. At present the estimate includes people within four hours patrol walk from the station, in the Northerly direction towards MAGARIMA.

Due the compact nature of the groups generally, I am of the opinion that this is an easy area for patrolling purposes, and with the installation of communication roads of good standard, an Officer from NIPA could easily handle more work than will be found in the NEMBI area itself, at this stage of development by the people. If the Officer is to remain based at NIPA present indications intimate that he could effectively patrol the Wage area toward MAGARIMA, though this might entail a revision of sub-district boundaries, and inclusion of the small area in that general area that at present is technically administered from Lake Kutubu.

(K.Jordan.)
A.D.O. 1.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORT

District of Southern Highlands Report No. NIPA No 3 of 1959/60

Patrol Conducted by D. N. BUTLER Patrol Officer Gp II

Area Patrolled Nembi River

Patrol Accompanied by Europeans Mr. B. M. O'Neill A/ADO
R.P.N.G.C. 11

Natives Carriers 22

Duration—From 23/2/1960 to 1/3/1960

Number of Days 8

Did Medical Assistant Accompany? No

Last Patrol to Area by—District Services ../2../1960

Medical .... —/—/19....

Map Reference Four mile series

Objects of Patrol Investigate and settle inter-village unrest

.....

DIRECTOR OF DISTRICT SERVICES
AND NATIVE AFFAIRS,
PORT MORESBY.

Forwarded, please.

12/3/1960 .....
District Commissioner

Amount Paid for War Damage Compensation .... £.....

Amount Paid from D.N.E. Trust Fund .... £.....

Amount Paid from P.E.D.P. Trust Fund .... £.....

.....

.....

.....

57-15-36

31st March, 1960.

District Officer,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

PATROL REPORT HEPA NO. 3/59.60.

As I have stated in another context, there is no real hurry to census these people. The time is ripe when they are well settled under the fighting prohibition. You are quite correct in assuming there will be further infractions of the ban, and it is good to note that the people are promised more severe reprisals in future. It is now necessary to get progressively tougher when the MENDI decide to pursue their savage diversionaries.

Mr. Butler has handled the outbreak with tact and discretion; it is good to note the friendly relations that existed after the affair was amicably settled.

The chief concern of this Headquarters is the safety of patrol personnel; extension of control is important but it has no priority over the men doing the job who are not expendable; this is the reason "nocturnal raids are frowned upon".

(T.G.Atkinson)
Acting Director

...s Mrs.

67.15.36

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

In Reply
Please Quote

No. 30/1/898

District Office,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

18th March, 1960.

DEPARTMENT OF NATIVE AFFAIRS
RECEIVED
28 MAR 1960

The Director,
Department of Native Affairs,
KONEDOBU,
Papua.

NIPA PATROL NO. 3 OF 59/60

Herewith Mr. Butler's report on the above patrol, together with covering Memorandum 67-2-3 dated the 17th March, 1960, from the Assistant District Officer, Mendi.

This is a good report of a delicate situation well handled and a job well done. Without doubt prompt action prevented more serious trouble developing and also appears to have had a beneficial affect on the area generally. It is pleasing to note that people from the area concerned are now visiting Nipa. The Headman, Sobe, was not as seriously injured as was first thought. He has fully recovered, was discharged from hospital on the 7th March and has been repatriated to Nipa.

K.W. Dyer
DISTRICT OFFICER

Enclosures

Sobe to Nipa

30/1/898

District Office,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

18th March, 1960.

The Director,
Department of Native Affairs,
KONEDOBU,
Papua.

NIPA PATROL NO. 3 OF 59/60

Herewith Mr. Butler's report on the above patrol, together with covering memorandum 67-2-3 dated the 17th March, 1960, from the Assistant District Officer, Mendi.

This is a good report of a delicate situation well handled and a job well done. Without doubt prompt action prevented more serious trouble developing and also appears to have had a beneficial effect on the area generally. It is pleasing to note that people from the area concerned are now visiting Nipa. The Headman, Sobe, was not as seriously injured as was first thought. He has fully recovered, was discharged from hospital on the 7th March and has been repatriated to Nipa. ...longer be ignored by the Administration. Mr. Butler assures me that penalties for breaches will be made progressively more severe as influence becomes stronger.

At the present time Mr. [illegible] on patrol. He intends returning to NIPA ... in this report. If the circumstances permit ... will be accepted and further explanation made of the aims and policies of the Administration.

Under the circumstances I consider Mr. Butler's explanation if the absence of a map is quite reasonable.

(S.K. O'NEILL)
A/DISTRICT OFFICER

Enclosures

c.c. O.I.C. NIPA.

67-3-3.

RMO:FT.

Sub District Office,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

17th March, 1960.

The District Officer,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

NIPA PATROL 3/1959-60.

Three copies of the above report go forward herewith together with a copy of Mr. Butler's covering memorandum.

The patrol was successful and the parties to the dispute accepted arbitration without demur. Had the patrol not visited the area it is fairly certain that inter-group fighting would have broken out.

The patrol averted such a clash and also convienced the people that breaches of the peace would no longer be ignored by the Administration. Mr. Butler assures me that penalties for breaches will be made progressively more severe as influence becomes stronger.

At the present time Mr. Butler is again on patrol. He intends returning to NIPA via the area covered in this report. If the circumstances permit an initial census will be attempted and further explanation made of the aims and policies of the Administration.

Under the circumstances I consider Mr. Butler's explanation if the absence of a map is quite reasonable.

(B.M. O'NEILL)
a/Assistant District Officer.

c.c. O.I.C. NIPA.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Patrol Post, K.P.A.
MENDI Sub District,
Southern Highlands District.

3rd. March, 1960

The Assistant District Officer,
Mendi Sub District,
M E N D I

KIPA PATROL REPORT No. 3 of 1959/60

Attached please find three copies of the above report, together with Camping Allowance Claims, Police Form 1, & copy of the patrol comments on the Police Detachment.

The standard of typing of this report and maps is not that which the writer would like, however the typewriter held does not function correctly and further requires a new ribbon.

There is no mapping details or map attached as the only Provisile series map held here shows a blank for the area patrolled and new data has not yet been compiled. There is no compass held here so any details gathered on later patrols will be only guess work.

D. M. BUTLER
Officer-in-Charge.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORT No. 3 of 1959/60

Patrol Conducted by: D. N. BUTLER Patrol Officer Gr.II

Area Patrolled: Nembi Valley.

Patrol Accompanied by:

Europeans: Mr. B.M. O'Neill A/A.D.O.

Natives: R.P.& N.G.C. 11
Carriers 32

Duration: From 25/2/60
To 1/3/60

Number of days 8

Did Medical Assistant Accompany? No.

Last Patrol to Area by: Native Affairs 2/60
Medical Nil

Map Reference: No accurate maps available and being compiled. Fourmile series covers area in no detail.

Objects of Patrol: To investigate and settle a reported sneak attack upon ENJIP Village by the men of EBIL Group.

D. N. BUTLER
Officer-in-Charge.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORT NIPA No. 3 of 1959/60

FEBUARY, 1960 Tuesday, 23rd.

Departed NIPA with six native constabulary, at 0700 hrs. and arrived at INJIP Village at 0800 hrs. Discovered the wounded man, SOBE, was alive, contrary to all reports, and after medical attention he improved to a stage where evacuation to Mendi Hospital was possible.

Departed INJIP at 1030 hrs. and arrived at NIPA with the patient at 1200 hrs. and immediate radio contact made with the District Officer at Mendi. The help of Madang D.C.A. Aeradio Station was greatly appreciated in this matter.

Mr. B.M. O'Neill, Acting A.D.O. Mendi, and three members of the Native Constabulary arrived from Mendi by Cessna aircraft and the injured man was evacuated.

Wednesday, 24th.

The patrol was prepared and departed NIPA at 1100 hrs. after receiving a report from the D.M.O. that the wounded man's condition was very satisfactory and he would live. The patrol passed through INJIP Village pausing to discuss the matter with the gathered people, and camp was set up on a deserted and destroyed ceremonial ground midway between INJIP and EBIL Villages.

The INJIP Villagers assisted the patrol erect the camp before returning to their village, however no foods were offered for sale and ~~and~~ carried rations were issued.

Extremely heavy rain fell during the night.

Thursday, 25th.

Remained in camp conversing with the people who had gathered from INJIP and villages friendly to INJIP, and some time was spent convincing them that no attempt should be made to follow the patrol or take advantage of its presence to damage EBIL property.

At 1200 hrs. eleven EBIL men approached the camp and seven were persuaded to enter and talk with the Officers. They were told that the patrol would follow them into EBIL and that the people should gather to discuss the allegations made against them and endeavour to come to some agreement with the Government and the INJIP people.

The patrol departed shortly after the men had left and on arrival at EBIL found the Village deserted excepting for a few INJIP group men who were permanently residing at EBIL and ~~xx~~ who claimed no knowledge what-so-ever of the alleged attack.

As a precaution against any attempt to molest the patrol, our camp was set up on a ridge between two gardens a very short distance from the main ceremonial ground.

In the late afternoon shouting was heard from ANDUWARI, a village on a high ridge on the opposite bank of the NEMBI River, and a shouted conversation ensued, during which the ANDUWARI admitted carrying out the attack upon SOBE but claimed that it was done at the invitation of the EBIL leaders. The ANDUWARI informed the patrol that if it crossed the river they, the ANDUWARI, would evacuate their village. After some persuading they agreed to await the patrol's coming in the morning.

Food was taken from gardens and payment left in small trade.

Friday, 26th.

Departed camp at 0830 hrs. and crossed the NEMBI River. After climbing a very steep slope the patrol arrived at a grass covered ridge below the village of ANDUWARI and set up camp. After some time two ANDUWARI men, accompanied by friendly men from other villages, visited the camp and were told that the matter could be settled by the payment of three items of wealth in compensation to the injured INJIP man, before being sent off to inform the other villages.

There were no further visitors to the camp but shortly before dusk the ANDUWARI shouted down that they were afraid to visit the camp and were now evacuating their village. They were told that there was no reason for fear, however there was no answer made.

Foods were taken from gardens and payment left.

Saturday, 27th.

Early morning brought shouting from the ANDUWARI that, while they were afraid to visit the camp they would await the Officers at their main ceremonial ground, and would there discuss the attack and the compensation demands.

At 1100 hrs. both Officers with a party of seven native constabulary and interpreters, proceeded to the ceremonial ground to find it deserted. There was no answers made to the parties shouting and no contact was made so the party returned to camp at 1230 hrs.

In the late afternoon several men visited the camp and claimed that although they were not ANDUWARI they were acting as emmissaries for them. They were instructed of the compensation dmands and told to pass them on to their principals.

There were no further visits to the camp and no further shouting was heard.

Foods taken from nearby gardens were paid for in small trade.

Sunday, 28th.

The emmissaries of yesterday arrived in camp in the morning with one reasonably large pig and after being told that it was acceptable as one item, went off and returned with some twenty or so ANDUWARI men and two Mother-of-pearl shell which, together with the pig, were handed over to the brother of the injured man.

They were then told that the matter was closed and all expressed themselves satisfied with the arrangements.

After listening to a talk from the writer the people left the camp.

Food again taken from the gardens and payment left.

Monday, 29th.

The patrol departed at 0900 hrs. with some 50 or so men from various villages bear ANDUWARI and arrived at a garden near EBIL at 1030 hrs. where shouting was heard and interpreted as a threat that if the patrol entered the village the EBIL would attack. It was not actually confirmed that such threats were made, they may have been slanting in interpretation, and the patrol entered a deserted village. Camp was made on the main ceremonial ground and as a precaution against possible molesting the surrounding cane grass was cleared for some ten to fifteen yards.

Both Officers left the camp and made contact with a group of people on a main track a short distance outside the village pallisades. These men were persuaded to come into the camp were they were told of the compensations demands and the reasons explained, before they went off.

A short time later a group of EBIL men entered the camp bringin one pig and two Mother-of-pearl shell which were handed over as compensation.

Both Officers addressed the people and explained the immediate aims of the Station at NIPA and the general aims of patrols, after which several men went off with a copra sack provided by the patrol and returned with native foods which were purchased.

Tuesday, 1st. March.

The patrol left EBIL at 0930 hrs. after further talks and arrived at INJIP shortly after where the EBIL men accompanying the patrol mingled with the INJIP men who assembled and there were friendly overtures given and received. Both parties were told that the incident was closed and this statement was received well.

Carried on to NIPA with men of INJIP, EBIL and other villages following the patrol, arriving at 1200 hrs. The patrol was stood down.

+++++ END OF PATROL +++++

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORT NIPA No. 3 of 1959/60 3

INTRODUCTION.

The object of this patrol was to investigate and settle an alleged assault made by men of the EBIL group upon an INJIP Village Leader.

These villages are in the main NEMBI River Valley, INJIP being some 90 minutes and EBIL some two hours walking from the Patrol Post at NIPA. Both were visited during Patrol, NIPA No. 2 of 1959/60, when the then Officer-in-Charge informed the people that the Government had banned fighting and forays in the area and told them that any breaches of this ban would be followed by intervention from NIPA.

The incident was first heard of at NIPA on Monday, 22nd. Febuary, when rumours were shouted from nearby villages and confirmation was requested. At 2000 hrs. an INJIP Village leader reported to the writer that his brother had been wounded in the back by three arrows while standing within the village bounds and was at the time very nearly dead. At 2030 hrs., while this man was being interviewed, renewed shouting was interpreted as a report of death.

Tuesday morning the writer, with a party of native constabulary, went to INJIP to investigate the matter and confirm the death. On arrival there some 200 men and women were gathered mourning, in extremely vocal terms, the death of their leader SOBE.

To all appearance and from all discussion up to this point, the man was dead and the writer had just begun to ask as diplomatically as possible to avoid hurt feelings or resentment, that the wailing cease and the body be turned that injuries might be noted, when a fly, alighting on an eyelid and apparently stinging, caused a flicker of movement. A check revealed little pulse and slight respiartion while body temperature was low, however it was decided to attempt medical attention. This was carried out against some opposition from the relatives who believed the man as good as dead.

Within twenty minutes SOBE was sitting up and joining in intelligent discussion of the happenings; albiet weakly. It was decided that he should be evacuated to Mendi Hospital for removal of at least two human bone arrow tips which were still in wounds but again opposition came from the relatives who wished to try first their own type of surgery. This time the patient himself expressed a wish for expert treatment and the opposition overcome quite easily.

The patient reached NIPA at 1200 hrs. and departed for Mendi by Cessna at 1330 hrs.

The matter was reported to the District Officer Mendi, by radio, and it was suggested by the writer that, while the INJIP people could possibly be persuaded to hold off any retaliatory attacks upon the EBIL group for several days and await Government intervention and settlement of the matter, it was imperative that a strong patrol, of a strength which could discourage any possible attempts to attack or molest the patrol in this area which is not yet under good control, should move out to the area as soon as possible. For this reason it was suggested that a second Officer and at least three native constabulary be made available from Mendi.

Mr. B.M. O'Neill, Acting A.D.O. Mendi, and three native police arrived from Mendi at 1430 hrs.

From Investigation at INJIP, later confirmed at all points, the attack had occurred after EBIL leaders requested support from SOA and ANDUWARI fighting for an attack on INJIP Village. The men of EBIL, SOA and ANDUWARI gathered and stealthily approached INJIP while three young men quietly entered INJIP and finding SOBE unwary, shot him in the back.

INTRODUCTION Cont.

Apparently it was thought that the INJIP would mass and pursue the three young men whereupon the massed and hidden SBIL men could inflict grievous damage. The INJIP did not pursue - they claim to have heard the "Government talk", which may be the case - and no inter village fighting took place. The heavy rain which commenced to fall shortly before the attack upon SOBE may have had much to do in dampening the fighting ardour of the INJIP.

This was the position when the patrol set out from NIPA and because of the writer's greater familiarity with the area and groups involved, Mr. O'Neill asked him to lead the patrol. It was also agreed that as the writer is the permanent Officer-In-Charge of the NIPA Post, such an arrangement would be less confusing to the local people than would have been the case had Mr. O'Neill led the patrol.

Should need have arisen it was agreed that Mr. O'Neill would undertake any Magisterial duties and, of course, in the case of armed opposition to the patrol Mr. O'Neill and the Mendi police would have been valuable reinforcement.

NATIVE AFFAIRS

There were only three principal parties to the attack upon SOBE and it was decided not to try to make arrests in the first instance as it was believed that such a course would have led to either ;

(a) Evacuation of the area by the population. This would have inflicted unnecessary hardship upon the women, children and older people; or

(b) Armed opposition to the patrol and to the parties making, or attempting to make, arrests.

The people did, in fact, evacuate however little hardship resulted as they only went to nearby hamlets and villages to await the patrol's next move.

It was decided that it would be futile to attempt pursuit in this terrain as a party led by a European is too slow and as both nocturnal raids and raids by small parties of native constabulary are now frowned upon any pursuit would have met with little success.

In addition 95 percent of any arrests made would, of course, have been of little use as basically three men only were sought.

Thus it was decided to play a waiting game and to this end the patrol deliberately moved slowly into the area, hoping to give the impression that if necessary it would remain in the area indefinitely. In anticipation of a long wait before the people could be persuaded to come in, the basic rations carried by the patrol were conserved and food obtained by foraging. Small articles of trade were left in gardens as payment for any food taken.

This approach paid dividends for within 24 hrs. of arriving at ANDUWARI Village, emissaries sent by the ANDUWARI arrived to negotiate with the patrol. The emissaries were instructed to tell their principals that as this was a new area and the Government had only recently banned inter-village fighting and forays, their conduct would be excused if they and the people of SBIL and SOA, paid compensation to the injured man.

This was agreed to and in the presence of the patrol two pigs and four Mother-of-Pearl shell were paid over to the brother of the injured man. All parties expressed themselves as satisfied with the arrangement and all were given to understand that the Government considered the incident

NATIVE AFFAIRS Cont.

closed and that they were to adopt the same attitude. This was agreed to without demur.

The ban on fighting was strongly re-iterated and all were given firmly to understand that and similar incidents in the future would be dealt with much more severely.

A large group of men from the EBIL Villages accompanied the patrol to KUJIP and from there to the station, where many young men offered to remain as labourers. A numb r were selected and for the next few months will work and live with others from groups which are traditional enemies of their own group. Since completion of the patrol men and women from EBIL have visited the station bringing food for sale and, as to do this they must pass through KUJIP country, it would appear that for the present friendly relationships are established.

CONCLUSION

It is considered lucky indeed that this, the first breaking of the ban on inter-village fighting which was announced during NIPA Patrol No. 2 of 1959/60, was so close to the station and therefore more quickly and easily handled, than would have been the case had the incident happened further away.

Such an incident had to be expected and it is undoubtable that others will occur in the future, however it can be hoped that they will be handled with as little trouble; but not expected!

The patrol was successful in every way in achieving its objectives and the area was left more settled and more friendly towards the Government than in the past. SOA Village which was deserted some months ago, is now being re-settled, EBIL men and women have visited the station for the first time and since the patrol's return have brought in food for barter, and the young men who will live and work on the station with traditional enemies as volunteer rather than recruited labour, also indicate improved relationsh ips.

It is hoped that a census patrol will be carried out in the area within the next two to four weeks and this too should help to settle the area further and improve relation ship.

While present indications are that conditions in the area are good and that the way in which settlement was effected in this incident should reach further than the areas visited, future patrols should be ready, in this area and the whole valley, for unpredictable flights of ill-feeling and antagonism which could result in incidents or attack against a patrol. The area is not yet under good control, although steadily improving.

D. M. Butler.
Officer-in-Charge.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORT NIPA No. 3 of 1959/60

APPENDIX REPORT ON NATIVE CONSTABULARY

No. 6405 S/Constable DAUN (Mendi Detachment)
An extremely good N.C.O. with command and presence which impresses. Hard working and honest; an asset to any patrol.

No. 6975 Constable 1st. Class NAURA
An intelligent N.C.O. who handles people well. Works quite well and has good command.

No. 5100 Constable GIGNE
Dull-witted and slow, of very little use as he would rather talk than work, however he does behave himself.

No. 6936 Constable MUGALIONG
A very good constable who is willing to use his head. Works well and intelligently.

No. 7838 Constable KOMBOI (Mendi Detachment)
A good constable who works well.

No. 9084 Constable DEMAK
An average man whose conduct is quite satisfactory.

No. 9354 Constable TAPE
A willing young constable who works quite well.

9487 Constable OGUMUGAI
Slow and lacks initiative. Works well under close supervision.

No. 9517 Constable DAMAWA (Mendi Detachment)
Quite a good man who works well.

No. 9859 Constable SINDIN.
A good worker when he understands what is required. Should improve with experience as he is still unsure of himself.

No. 10050 Constable (Bugler) EIGA
Young and inexperienced in general duties, but at delightful Bugler. Should improve as a worker with time.

D. N. BUTLER
Officer R.P & N.G.C.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORT No. 3 of 1959/60

Patrol Conducted by: D. M. BUTLER Patrol Officer Gr.II

Area Patrolled: Nadzi Valley.

Patrol Accompanied by:

Europeans: Mr. D.M. O'Neill A/A.D.O.

Natives: P.P.& N.G.C. 11
Carriers 58

Duration: From 28/2/60
To 1/3/60

Number of days 3

Did Medical Assistant Accompany? No.

Last Patrol to Area, by: Native Affairs 2/59
Medical Nil

Map Reference: No accurate maps available and being compiled. Forestile series covers area in no detail.

Objects of Patrol: To investigate and settle a reported assault upon DUVE village by the men of EKIL Group.

D. M. Butler
D. M. BUTLER
Officer-in-Charge.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORT NIPA No. 3 of 1959/60

FEBUARY, 1960 Tuesday, 23rd.

Departed NIPA with six native constabulary, at 0700 hrs. and arrived at ENJIP Village at 0800 hrs. Discovered the wounded man, SOBE, was alive, contrary to all reports, and after medical attention he improved to a stage where evacuation to Mendi Hospital was possible.

Departed ENJIP at 1030 hrs. and arrived at NIPA with the patient at 1200 hrs. and immediate radio contact made with the District Officer at Mendi. The help of Madang D.C.A. Aeradio Station was greatly appreciated in this matter.

Mr. B.M. O'Neill, Acting A.D.O. Mendi, and three members of the Native Constabulary arrived from Mendi by Cessna aircraft and the injured man was evacuated.

Wednesday, 24th.

The patrol was prepared and departed NIPA at 1100 hrs. after receiving a report from the D.M.O. that the wounded man's condition was very satisfactory and he would live. The patrol passed through ENJIP Village pausing to discuss the matter with the gathered people, and camp was set up on a deserted and destroyed ceremonial ground midway between ENJIP and KEIL Villages.

The ENJIP Villagers assisted the patrol erect the camp before returning to their village, however no foods were offered for sale and ma carried rations were issued.

Extremely heavy rain fell during the night.

Thursday, 25th.

Remained in camp conversing with the people who had gathered from ENJIP and villages friendly to ENJIP, and some time was spent convincing them that no attempt should be made to follow the patrol or take advantage of its presence to damage KEIL property.

At 1200 hrs. eleven KEIL men approached the camp and seven were persuaded to enter and talk with the Officers. They were told that the patrol would follow them into KEIL and that the people should gather to discuss the allegations made against them and endeavour to come to some agreement with the Government and the ENJIP people.

The patrol departed shortly after the men had left and on arrival at KEIL found the Village deserted excepting for a few ENJIP group men who were permanently residing at KEIL and who claimed no knowledge whatsoever of the alleged attack.

As a precaution against any attempt to molest the patrol, camp was set up on a ridge between two gardens a very short distance from the main ceremonial ground.

In the late afternoon shouting was heard from ANDUWARI, a village on a high ridge on the opposite bank of the NEMBI River, and a shouted conversation ensued, during which the ANDUWARI admitted carrying out the attack upon SOBE but claimed that it was done at the invitation of the KEIL leaders. The ANDUWARI informed the patrol that if it crossed the river they, the ANDUWARI, would evacuate their village. After some persuading they agreed to await the patrol's coming in the morning.

Food was taken from gardens and payment left in small trade.

Friday, 26th.

Departed camp at 0630 hrs. and crossed the NEMBI River. After climbing a very steep slope the patrol arrived at a grass covered ridge below the village of ANDUWARI and set up camp. After some time two ANDUWARI men, accompanied by friendly men from other villages, visited the camp and were told that the matter could be settled by the payment of three items of wealth in compensation to the injured ENJIP man, before being sent off to inform the other villages.

There were no further visitors to the camp but shortly before dusk the ANDUWARI shouted down that they were afraid to visit the camp and were now evacuating their village. They were told that there was no reason for fear, however there was no answer made.

Foods were taken from gardens and payment left.

Saturday, 27th.

Early morning brought shouting from the ANDUWARI that, while they were afraid to visit the camp they would await the Officers at their main ceremonial ground, and would there discuss the attack and the compensation demands.

At 1130 hrs. both Officers with a party of seven native constabulary and interpreters, proceeded to the ceremonial ground to find it deserted. There was no answers made to the parties shouting and no contact was made so the party returned to camp at 1230 hrs.

In the late afternoon several men visited the camp and claimed that although they were not ANDUWARI they were acting as emissaries for them. They were instructed of the compensation demands and told to pass them on to their principals.

There were no further visits to the camp and no further shouting was heard.

Foods taken from nearby gardens were paid for in small trade.

Sunday, 28th.

The emissaries of yesterday arrived in camp in the morning with one reasonably large pig and after being told that it was acceptable as one item, went off and returned with some twenty or so ANDUWARI men and two Mother-of-pearl shell which, together with the pig, were handed over to the brother of the injured man.

They were then told that the matter was closed and all appeared themselves satisfied with the arrangements.

After listening to a talk from the writer the people left the camp.

Food again taken from the gardens and payment left.

Monday, 29th.

The patrol departed at 0800 hrs. with some 50 or so men from various villages near ANDUWARI and arrived at a garden near KEIL at 1030 hrs. where shouting was heard and interpreted as a threat that if the patrol entered the village the KEIL would attack. It was not actually confirmed that such threats were made, they may have been alerting in interpretation, and the patrol entered a deserted village. Camp was made on the main ceremonial ground and as a precaution against possible molesting the surrounding cane grass was cleared for some ten to fifteen yards.

Both Officers left the camp and made contact with a group of people on a main track a short distance outside the village palisades. These men were persuaded to come into the camp were they were told of the compensations demands and the reasons explained, before they went off.

A short time later a group of KEIL men entered the camp bringing one pig and two Mother-of-pearl shell which were handed over as compensation.

Both Officers addressed the people and explained the immediate aims of the Station at NIPA and the general aims of patrols, after which several men went off with a copra sack provided by the patrol and returned with native foods which were purchased.

Tuesday, 1st. March.

The patrol left KEIL at 0930 hrs. after further talks and arrived at INJIP shortly after where the KEIL men accompanying the patrol mingled with the INJIP men who assembled and there were friendly overtures given and received. Both parties were told that the incident was closed and this statement was received well.

Carried on to NIPA with men of INJIP, KEIL and other villages following the patrol, arriving at 1200 hrs. The patrol was stood down.

+++++ END OF PATROL +++++

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORT NIPA No. 3 of 1959/60 3

INTRODUCTION.

The object of this patrol was to investigate and settle an alleged assault made by men of the KEKIL group upon an INJIP Village Leader.

These villages are in the main NEMBI River Valley, INJIP being some 90 minutes and KEKIL some two hours walking from the Patrol Post at NIPA. Both were visited during Patrol, NIPA No. 2 of 1959/60, when the then Officer-in-Charge informed the people that the Government had banned fighting and forays in the area and told them that any breaches of this ban would be followed by intervention from NIPA.

The incident was first heard of at NIPA on Monday, 22nd. February, when rumours were shouted from nearby villages and confirmation was requested. At 2000 hrs. an INJIP Village leader reported to the writer that his brother had been wounded in the back by three arrows while standing within the village bounds and was at the time very nearly dead. At 2030 hrs., while this man was being interviewed, renewed shouting was interpreted as a report of death.

Tuesday morning the writer, with a party of native constabulary, went to INJIP to investigate the matter and confirm the death. On arrival there some 200 men and women were gathered mourning, in extremely vocal terms, the death of their leader SOBE.

To all appearance and from all discussion up to this point, the man was dead and the writer had just begun to ask as diplomatically as possible to avoid hurt feelings or resentment, that the wailing cease and the body be turned that injuries might be noted, when a fly, alighting on an eyelid and apparently stinging, caused a flicker of movement. A check revealed little pulse and slight respiartion while body temperature was low, however it was decided to attempt medical attention. This was carried out against some opposition from the relatives who believed the man as good as dead.

Within twenty minutes SOBE was sitting up and joining in intelligent discussion of the happenings; albiet weakly. It was decided that he should be evacuated to Mendi Hospital for removal of at least two human bone arrow tips which were still in wounds but again opposition came from the relatives who wished to try first their own type of surgery. This time the patient himself expressed a wish for expert treatment and the opposition overcome quite easily.

The patient reached NIPA at 1200 hrs. and departed for Mendi by Cessna at 1350 hrs.

The matter was reported to the District Officer Mendi, by radio, and it was suggested by the writer that, while the INJIP people could possibly be persuaded to hold off any retaliatory attacks upon the KEKIL group for several days and await Government intervention and settlement of the matter, it was imperative that a strong patrol, of a strength which could discourage any possible attempts to attack or molest the patrol in this area which is not yet under good control, should move out to the area as soon as possible. For this reason it was suggested that a second Officer and at least three native constabulary be made available from Mendi.

Mr. B.M. O'Neill, Acting A.D.O. Mendi, and three native police arrived from Mendi at 1430 hrs.

From Investigation at INJIP, later confirmed at all points, the attack had occurred after KEKIL leaders requested support from SOA and ANDUWERI fighting for an attack on INJIP Village. The men of KEKIL, SOA and ANDUWAPI gathered and stealthily approached INJIP while three young men quietly entered INJIP and finding SOBE unwary, shot him in the back.

INTRODUCTION Cont.

Apparently it was thought that the INJIP would mass and pursue to three young men whereupon the massed and hidden KUKI war could inflict grievous damage. The INJIP did not pursue - they claim to have heard the "Government talk", which may be the case - and no inter village fighting took place. The heavy rain which commenced to fall shortly before the attack upon SOKE may have had much to do in deepening the fighting ardour of the INJIP.

This was the position when the patrol set out from NIPA and because of the writer's greater familiarity with the area and groups involved, Mr. O'Neill asked him to lead the patrol. It was also agreed that as the writer is the permanent Officer-In-Charge of the NIPA Post, such an arrangement would be less confusing to the local people than would have been the case had Mr. O'Neill led the patrol.

Should need have arisen it was agreed that Mr. O'Neill would undertake any Magisterial duties and, of course, in the case of armed opposition to the patrol Mr. O'Neill and the Kundi police would have been valuable reinforcement.

NATIVE AFFAIRS

There were only three principal parties to the attack upon SOKE and it was decided not to try to make arrests in the first instance as it was believed that such a course would have led to either :

(a) Evacuation of the area by the population. This would have inflicted unnecessary hardship upon the women, children and older people; or

(b) Armed opposition to the patrol and to the parties making, or attempting to make, arrests.

The people did, in fact, evacuate however little hardship resulted as they only went to nearby hamlets and villages to await the patrol's next move.

It was decided that it would be futile to attempt pursuit in this terrain as a party led by a European is too slow and as both nocturnal raids and raids by small parties of native constabulary are now frowned upon any pursuit would have met with little success.

In addition 95 percent of any arrests made would, of course, have been of little use as basically three men only were sought.

Thus it was decided to play a waiting game and to this end the patrol deliberately moved slowly into the area, hoping to give the impression that if necessary it would remain in the area indefinitely. In anticipation of a long wait before the people could be persuaded to come in, the basic rations carried by the patrol were conserved and food obtained by foraging. Small articles of trade were left in gardens as payment for any food taken.

This approach paid dividends for within 24 hrs. of arriving at ANDUWAKI Village, emissaries sent by the ANDUWAKI arrived to negotiate with the patrol. The emissaries were instructed to tell their principals that as this was a new area and the Government had only recently banned inter-village fighting and forays, their conduct would be excused if they and the people of KUKI and SOA, paid compensation to the injured man.

This was agreed to and in the presence of the patrol two pigs and four Mother-of-Pearl shell were paid over to the brother of the injured man. All parties expressed themselves as satisfied with the arrangement and all were given to understand that the Government considered the incident

NATIVE AFFAIRS Cont.

closed and that they were to adopt the same attitude. This was agreed to without demur.

The ban on fighting was strongly re-iterated and all were given firmly to understand that and similar incidents in the future would be dealt with much more severely.

A large group of men from the KEIL Villages accompanied the patrol to INJIP and from there to the station, where many young men offered to remain as labourers. A number were selected and for the next few months will work and live with others from groups which are traditional enemies of their own group. Since completion of the patrol men and women from KEIL have visited the station bringing food for sale and, as to do this they must pass through INJIP country, it would appear that for the present friendly relationships are established.

CONCLUSION

It is considered lucky indeed that this, the first breaking of the ban on inter-village fighting which was announced during NIPA patrol No. 2 of 1959/60, was so close to the station and therefore more quickly and easily handled, than would have been the case had the incident happened further away.

Such an incident had to be expected and it is undoubtable that others will occur in the future, however it can be hoped that they will be handled with as little trouble; but not expected!

The patrol was successful in every way in achieving its objectives and the area was left more settled and more friendly towards the Government than in the past. SOA Village which was deserted some months ago, is now being re-settled, KEIL men and women have visited the station for the first time and since the patrol's return have brought in food for barter, and the young men who will live and work on the station with traditional enemies as volunteer rather than recruited labour, also indicate improved relationships.

It is hoped that a census patrol will be carried out in the area within the next two to four weeks and this too should help to settle the area further and improve relation ship.

While present indications are that conditions in the area are good and that the way in which settlement was effected in this incident should reach further than the areas visited, future patrols should be ready, in this area and the whole valley, for unpredictable flights of ill-feeling and antagonism which could result in incidents or attack against a patrol. The area is not yet under good control, although steadily improving.

D. M. Butler.
Officer-in-Charge.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORT NIPA No. 5 of 1959/60

APPENDIX REPORT ON NATIVE CONSTABULARY

No. 6405 S/Constable DANE (Mendi Detachment)
An extremely good N.C.O. with command and presence which impresses. Hard working and honest; an asset to any patrol.

No. 6975 Constable 1st. Class MAURA
An intelligent N.C.O. who handles people well. Works quite well and has good command.

No. 5100 Constable GIENE
Dull-witted and slow, of very little use as he would rather talk than work, however he does behave himself.

No. 6038 Constable MENAIENE
A very good constable who is willing to use his head. Works well and intelligently.

No. 7838 Constable KENDE (Mendi Detachment)
A good constable who works well.

No. 9064 Constable DEKE
An average man whose conduct is quite satisfactory.

No. 9384 Constable TATE
A willing young constable who works quite well.

9457 Constable GUNAGAI
Slow and lacks initiative. Works well under close supervision.

No. 9837 Constable KEMBA (Mendi Detachment)
quite a good man who works well.

No. 9859 Constable SINDIK.
A good worker when he understands what is required. Should improve with experience as he is still unsure of himself.

No. 10050 Constable (Bugler) NEBA
Young and inexperienced in general duties, but at delightful Bugler. Should improve as a worker with time.

D. N. BUTLER
Officer I.P & N.G.C.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORT

District of...Southern Highlands..... Report No...Nipa No 4 1959/60.....

Patrol Conducted by.....D.N. Butler P.O. II.....

Area Patrolled...Nembi Valley.....Nipa / Nembi L. of C.....

Patrol Accompanied by Europeans...@ Asst. C.J. Keightley 4.6.64/60
@ R.A. Head P.O.I Return Mendi/Nipa & Village inspections.

Natives.....Various.....

Duration—From...11/..3.../19.60.to...29/..5...19.60.

Number of Days.....36..... + 13 Hours - 49 Patrol Days.

Did Medical Assistant Accompany?.....No.....

Last Patrol to Area by—District Services...../...2.../19.60..

Medical .....Nil...../...../19.....

Map Reference...Tracing aerial contour map 1" to 2 miles.....

Objects of Patrol...@ Investigation native unrest. Work @ Consolidation & extension if time

@ Rough preliminary census where practicable @ Investigation MOM station site.....

DIRECTOR OF DISTRICT SERVICES
AND NATIVE AFFAIRS,
PORT MORESBY.

Forwarded, please.

20/ 7 /1960

.....
District Commissioner

Amount Paid for War Damage Compensation .... £.....

Amount Paid from D.N.E. Trust Fund .... £.....

Amount Paid from P.E.D.P. Trust Fund .... £.....

.....

.....

.....

67-15-52

9th August, 1960.

District Officer,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

PATROL NIPA No. 4 -1959-60.

Mr. Butler has exercised admirable tact and patience with these people and it is evident that real progress is being made in the NEMBI Valley, but I doubt that the time has yet arrived to commence de-restriction. It appears from several reports fromthis area that some more positive action should now be taken against murderers other than "MOGA" compensation. These people have been under Administrative influence for some years before the establishment of NEMBI Post. It is certain they are aware of the major objective ofthe Administration - the imposition of law and order. The fact that tribal warfare has practically ceased and has given place to the second stage of personal vendettas would indicate that individuals require to be deterred by individual reprisal. The time has passed for the group to compensate for unilateral treachery such as the murder of a youth from ambush by shooting in the back.

The Assistant District Officer has accurately interpreted the policy of this Headquarters in his fifth paragraph of comments. It is an excellent idea to begin the Administrative evolution on a sound basis initially by establishing a Council of Elders. You could consider arranging meetings at stated intervals suitable to local conditions. The Village Constable need not be a clan leader and preferably should not be; a younger man of strong personality and apprehension of the new order is to be favoured.

Reasonable interpretation is imperative at this stage, and your officers need to be fully aware when they use carriers from groups contiguous to Headquarters that the MENDI/NEMBI are traditionally hostile. The former delight in spreading rumours to involve their enemies with the Administration. It is difficult to supervise these propagandists and it might be better to use strangers, although it is often difficult to do so.

It is no coincidence that the degree of arrogance and dissidence is inversely proportionate to the number of patrols.

(J. K. McCarthy)
Acting Director.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA 67-15-52. ✓

In Reply Please Quote
No. 30/1 - 96.

District Office,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

19th July, 1960.

DEPARTMENT OF NATIVE AFFAIRS
RECEIVED
27 JUL 1960

The Assistant District Officer
MENDI.

PATROL NIPA NO. 4 - 1959/60.

Thank you for Mr. Butler's report on Nipa Patrol No.4 and your covering comments. I agree that the report is marred by spelling and typographical errors and I am sure Mr. Butler can exercise more care. Furthermore care should be given to ensure that place names in the map agree with the text of the report. for example, I presume the places shown on the map as ANJI? SUMP[illegible]AMBEGENDA refers to the places KANDI, SUMA and AMBEGENDA mentioned in the report.

I am quite satisfied that Mr. Butler is doing very good work in this area and for the present stage of development that the native situation is coming along very well.

Recommendations for Village Constables should not be hasty. I agree that younger men of personality and drive are preferable but there may be men of this calibre in the "Council of Elders" mentioned by Mr. Butler. Mature younger men rather than youths are what we need.

I believe the recording of names as done by Mr. Butler is a very good thing particularly if this helps, as it must, in gaining an insight into the social structure of the people and gaining greater contact and confidence.

I would like to see further patrols in the NIPA area accompanied by a Medical Assistant but with the present low ebb of medical staff in this District I cannot see that this is possible unless medical staff is increased.

I am still concerned with delays in the submission of reports. Patrol No. 5 was commenced immediately after Patrol 4, however, it was finished I believe before the end of June. This report should have been submitted by now. Please ensure in future that all reports are submitted preferably within 2 weeks and no later than 3 weeks from when the patrol is concluded.

c.c.
THE DIRECTOR OF NATIVE AFFAIRS:

For your information please. Report ....in duplicate is attached. Request for sun prints is being made by separate memorandu.

(K.W. Dyer)
District Officer.

(K.W. Dyer)
District Officer.

30/1 - 96.

District Office,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

19th July, 1960.

The Assistant District Officer,
M E N D I.

PATROL HIPA NO. 4 - 1959/60.

Thank you for Mr. Butler's report on Hipa Patrol No.4 and your covering comments. I agree that the report is marred by spelling and typographical errors and I am sure Mr. Butler can exercise more care. Furthermore care should be given to ensure that place names in the map agree with the text of the report. For example, I presume the places shown on the map as ANJI? SUMBI and[illegible]NDA refers to the places KANDI, SUMA and [illegible]NDA mentioned in the report.

I am quite satisfied that Mr. Butler is doing very good work in this area and for the present stage of development that the native situation is coming along very well.

Recommendations for Village Constables should not be nasty. I agree that younger men of personality and drive are preferable but there may be [illegible] of this calibre in the "Council of Elders" mentioned by Mr. Butler. Mature younger men rather than youths are what we need.

I believe the recording of names as done by Mr. Butler is a very good thing particularly if this helps, as it must, in gaining an insight into the social structure of the people and gaining greater contact and confidence.

I would like to see further patrols in the HIRA area accompanied by a Medical Assistant but with the present low ebb of medical staff in this District I cannot see that this is possible unless medical staff is increased.

I am still concerned with delays in the submission of reports. Patrol No. 5 was commenced immediately after Patrol 4, however, it was finished I believe before the end of June. This report should have been submitted by now. Please ensure in future that all reports are submitted preferably within 2 weeks and no later than 3 weeks from when the patrol is concluded.

c.c.
THE DIRECTOR OF NATIVE AFFAIRS.

For your information please. Report
[illegible]ir duplicate is attached. Request for sup
p[illegible]nts is being made by separate memorandu.

(K.W. Dyer)
District Officer.

(K.W. Dyer)
District Officer.

GS:BT.

67-2-3.

Sub-District Office,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

13th July, 1960.

The District Officer,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

NIPA PATROL NO.4-1959/60.

Please find herewith a report in triplicate of a patrol in the Nembi Administrative area, number 4 of 1959/60.

I anticipate that with the appointment of two trainee interpreters to NIPA the difficulty of interpretation should be overcome. It is to be regretted that Mr. Butler was unable to ascertain who was responsible for the rumour of atrocities etc. I hope that if this happens again he will be able to find out the originator.

Even in the early stage of development of the NIPA area I have asked Mr. Butler to record as many people as possible on census. If the census is conducted with the idea of meeting the people rather than just for the taking of names then I am sure that much closer contact will result.

In view of the general shortage of Medical Assistants it does not seem that we will be able to man a Hospital at Nembi for some time. I hope that it will be possible to arrange for a Medical Assistant to accompany at least three patrols in the Nembi during this financial year.

I have some doubts as to the desireability of appointing members of the council of elders to the Village Constabulary. It is I think better to concentrate on younger men of marked personality and with a commanding address, who are likely to be more amenable to change.

Mr Butler has asked for twenty sun-prints of the accompanying map. Future patrols will submit copies which show the patrol routes settlements and so on.

The report shows a clear picture of the native situation in thearea patrolled and it would seem that following the next patrol in the immediate vicinity of NIPA station consideration should be given to the de-restriction of an area of approximately five square miles around the station.

Presentation could well be improved. There are too many typographical errors.

/.

(GORDON SMITH)
Assistant District Officer.

GS:BT.

67-2-3.

Sub-District Office,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

13th July, 1960.

The District Officer,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

NIPA PATROL NO.4-1959/60.

Please find herewith a report in triplicate of a patrol in the Nembi Administrative area, number 4 of 1959/60.

I anticipate that with the appointment of two trainee interpreters to NIPA the difficulty of interpretation should be overcome. It is to be regretted that Mr. Butler was unable to ascertain who was responsible for the rumour of atrocities etc. I hope that if this happens again he will be able to find out the originator.

Even in the early stage of development of the NIPA area I have asked Mr. Butler to record as many people as possible on census. If the census is conducted with the idea of meeting the people rather than just for the taking of names then I am sure that much closer contact will result.

In view of the general shortage of Medical Assistants it does not seem that we will be able to man a Hospital at Nembi for some time. I hope that it will be possible to arrange for a Medical Assistant to accompany at least three patrols in the Nembi during this financial year.

I have some doubts as to the desireability of appointing members of the council of elders to the Village Constabulary. It is I think better to concentrate on younger men of marked personality and with a commanding adress, who are likely to be more amenable to change.

Mr Butler has asked for twenty sun-prints of the accompanying map. Future patrols will submit copies which show the patrol routes settlements and so on.

The report shows a clear picture of the native situation in thearea patrolled and it would seem that following the next patrol in the immediate vicinity of NIPA station consideration should be given to the de-restriction of an area of approximately five square miles around the station.

Presentation could well be improved. There are too many typographical errors.

Gordon Smith.

(GORDON SMITH)
Assistant District Officer.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Patrol Report No. 4 of 1959/60 NIPA S.H.D.

Patrol Conducted by: D. N. BUTLER Patrol Officer Gr.II

Area Patrolled: MENDI Valley, NIPA/MENDI L of C.

Patrol Accompanied by: (1) Rev. C.J. Keightley 4/4/60 : 6/4/60
(2) R.A.Head P.O.Gr.I Return MENDI/NIPA and Village Inspections.
(3) R.P.& N.G.C. Varying numbers.
Carriers Varying numbers.

Duration: 11/3/60 to 29/5/60.
36 days in broken periods.

Did Medical Assistant Accompany? No

Last Patrol to area By: Native Affairs 2/60
P.H.D. Nil

Map Reference: Fourmile series covers in no detail.
Sketch map accompanies.

Objects of Patrol: (1) Investigate reported unrest WE Crk.
(2) Consolidation and extension of influence.
(3) Rough preliminary Census where practicable
(4) Preliminary investigation M.O.M. Station site.

D. N. BUTLER

Officer-in-Charge, NIPA.

DIARY

1. Friday 11th. March.

Departed NIPA 1045 hrs. and arrived EBIL Ceremonial Ground 1245 hrs. where the patrol halted for 30 minutes and talked with the villagers before moving on.

After walking in torrential rain for 1½ hours arrived at MOBERA Ceremonial Ground at 1500 hrs.

The people appeared surly and unwilling to co-operate and it was only after some time spent in conversation that they went off to assist with the gathering of tent poles and eventually camp was erected with their help. A very small amount of food was purchased and supplemented by carried rations.

No attempt was made to discuss the alleged killing and the people were told that until attempts had been made to contact the offending group the matter was held in abeyance.

2. Saturday 12th. March.

By 1030 hrs. some 200 or so SOLA Group men were gathered at the camp and a group of 80-100 could be seen gathered on a nearby ridge top. They were reputedly the TEMBIL people, offenders in the matter in hand.

The SOLA were made sit quietly to one side of the camp and the TEMBIL invited to come down to discuss matters. This they refused to do with much brandishing of axes, bows and arrows and a flood of insults and abuse, however at about 1230 hrs. a dozen or so older men entered the camp area bringing with them a very large pig.

Three spokesmen from each group were brought together between the two groups of people and the whole matter discussed. After some hours all agreed to a "Moga" payment of 12 items for the youth who had been killed.

The large pig was purchased by the patrol and after being fastened behind a fighting pallisade, was shot by a volley from half the detachment of police. This made a very effective demonstration of firepower and suitably impressed members of both groups who examined the mutilated carcase before going off to their houses.

3. Sunday 13th. March.

The day was spent in discussions with the SOLA leaders concerning nearby groups and hamlets and sub-groups within the large SOLA group. The details are of doubtful accuracy as there became apparent very poor interpretation, whether because the interpreter had a poor grasp of the dialect or through his laziness could not be assertained.

Some native foods purchased and supplemented by carried rations.

The general atmosphere was not good and the people still appear surly and unco-operative.

At 1830 hrs. two young TEMBIL men appeared at the camp with nine items for the "Moga" payment and remained with the patrol overnight.

4. Monday 14th. March.

At 0730 hrs. six Tembil leaders arrived at the camp and in the presence of the patrol and the Sola people, laid out eighteen items for the "Moga" payment. Their apparent leader, or spokesman, made a speech in which he told the Sola that the six extra items were to signify the cessation of all hostility between the two groups.

The gathered people were given a short address and at 1000 hrs. the patrol moved off with the 8 Tembil men, arriving at ENJUM Ceremonial ground at 1130 hrs. where 100 or more men were gathered.

Camp was quickly set up and ample foods purchased.

By 1400 hrs. there were 450 or more men, women and children at the camp and they were told of census and its meaning and all agreed that they would appear for census tomorrow.

Details of surrounding groups and hamlets and sub-groups within Tembil group were discussed with the leaders.

The general atmosphere appears good and the people to be making and attempt to co-operate.

5. Tuesday 15th. March.

The day started with some 400 people gathered by 0900 hrs. and the census was again explained to them and a start made on organising them into family groups. While the first families were being interviewed the remaining people began to disappear and it was noticed that Mendi Patrol Carriers were in quiet conversation with the people who remained. These people then got up and left the Ceremonial Ground.

It appeared, though no confirmation could be made, that the carriers, mainly from the Mendi Valley, had told the people Census was merely a blind to atrocities, violence and injustice which would come later.

MENDI/NEMBI, mainly Lutheran

After some discussion with the village leaders, a family group of 37 came forward and their names were recorded. The 100 men who had returned without women or children, then offered themselves for census but when it was explained that names were wanted in family groups offered to return tomorrow with their families.

No anger was shewn at any time and the people were told

that they had no reason to fear the Administration or its patrols.

Again interpretation was poor and made a difficult situation even more difficult. With good interpretation the situation could have been saved but the young man interpreting, the only person available, appeared to render statements incompletely and was inattentive and lazy.

At 1630 hrs. a large group of men, women and children entered the camp and ample foods were purchased. The hours until dusk were spent talking with the people and many subjects were discussed.

The people still apear to be trying to co-operate and today's fiasco seems to be no fault of theirs.

6. Wednesday 16th. March.

A small group of men visited the camp in the early morning and during discussion with them it became apparent that the interpreter was, and had been in the past days, mis-interpreting statements and adding threats of violence to the writer's requests and statements, however with no check upon his interpretation no court action can be taken.

The interpreter was severely reprimanded and stood down from duty. An attempt was made to use the Mendi A.P.O. as interpreter and after several hours of struggling the patrol began to make headway.

The men went back to their houses to collect food after asking that the patrol remain longer so that the census could be made.

The writer climbed a nearby peak with several of the leaders and was shown nearby hamlets, ceremonial grounds and gardens belonging to the Tembil.

A large amount of food was purchased and many women and children remained at the camp talking with the writer.

7. Thursday 17th. March.

At 0830 hrs. a start was made on the census of the 350 or so people who were gathered and all went well until midday when an aircraft was heard in the direction of NIPA station. All the people present crowded to the side of the ceremonial ground to watch the aircraft, when suddenly there was a cry "There is another patrol coming and we will all be killed!" and with screams and shouts the people frantically ran from the ceremonial ground.

The patrol was ordered to remain fast and to make no move and no immediate action was taken, except to have a good hard look in the direction indicated. After about five minutes the cause of panic appeared again on a distant ridge and proved to be a group of natives, one of whom carried a bunch of bananas covered with dried banana leaves. When relayed to the people this gave rise to much laughter and after about 30 minutes or so many returned

and the census recommenced. At 1600 hrs the census of all those who had returned was completed with 255 names recorded and the people were told that the missing names would be recorded by later patrols.

The time until dark was spent talking with the people with them taking the lead in broaching many subjects.

8. Friday 18th. March.

Departed 0800 hrs. and arrived PULIM Ceremonial ground at 1200 hrs. where camp was erected with the help of the Pulim people.

Talked with the people and arranged to carry out census tomorrow when another interpreter had arrived.

Ample foods purchased.

9. Saturday 19th. March.

People assembled at 0930 hrs. and organised quite readily into family groups. The Census was completed at 1530 hrs with very little trouble and 275 names recorded.

Time until dusk spent in conversation with the people.

Ample foods purchased.

10. Sunday 20th. March.

After further discussion with the people, the patrol departed at 1000 hrs. and arrived at NIPA at 1035 hrs. en route EGENDA Ceramonial ground only to find the Egenda men had commenced thatching the new residence. It was decided to wait the completion of thatching and the patrol was stood down.

11. Friday 25th. March.

Writer visited KUARE Ceremonial ground on village inspection. Returned station for the night.

12. ~~Thursday~~ Monday 28th. March

Writer visited INJIP Ceremonial ground on village inspection. Returned station for the night.

13. Thursday 31st. March.

Writer visited KOMIA Village on inspection. Returned Station for the night.

14. Monday 4th. April.

Departed station 1000 hrs. accompanied by Rev. C.J. Keightley M.O.M. and arrived at a garden area between WOLAL and YOLAL Villages at 1100 hrs. Camp erected .

Walked around the surrounding area with the local people and discussed several suitable mission sites with them.

Purchased sufficient foods.

15. Tuesday 5th. April.

Again walked the surrounding areas and settled on a site on ground known as PURIL which was suitable to both the Rev. Keightley and the owners. This ground is approximately one and a half miles from NIPA.

No compass and chain available and so no traverse could be made, however the patrol did walk around the proposed boundaries with the owners who were happy to sell the land.

16. Wednesday 6th. April.

Again walked over the proposed site which is 45 to 50 acres in extent and includes only one acre or so under garden. The soil appeared quite good and there seems no reason why it should not be good garden land. The owners have ample land elsewhere, which perhaps explains why this land is not used.

Camp broken and the party returned to NIPA at 1430 hrs where the patrol members were stood down.

17. Saturday 9th. April.

Departed NIPA 1000 hrs. and arrived Egenda Ceremonial Ground 1130 hrs where camp erected.

Ample foods purchased and general discussions with the people arranging to make the census tomorrow.

18. Sunday 10th. April.

Census commenced at 0900 hrs. and 175 names recorded before rain interrupted just after midday.

Talks with the leaders during the afternoon and several disputes settled out of court.

Ample foods purchased.

19. Monday 11th. April.

Recommenced census and completed it at 1430 hrs. with 385 names recorded.

Talks with the people during the remainder of the day.

Ample foods purchased.

20. Tuesday 12th. April.

Departed Egenda at 0830 hrs. with all NIPA personnel and arrived at the flooded Lai River at 1300 hrs. to find only one bridge remaining and that partially under water, and many sections of the upstream track under water. Arrived Arop Rest House at 1515 after a hard slog.

Purchased a small amount of food and issued carried rations.

21. Wednesday 13th. April.

Departed 0700 hrs. and after a hard walk arrived at the Tulum Rest Camp at 1010 hrs. where the patrol rested until informed that one bridge was unservicable. Continued on along the motor road until meeting the Land Rover at 1230 hrs.

Arrived Mendi 1330 hrs. and the patrol stood down.

22. Tuesday 26th. April.

Departed Mendi at 1400 hrs. accompanied by Mr. Hoad P.O.I who is posted to NIPA. and picked up the main body of the patrol at 1500 hrs. making very slow time with the refrigerator cabinet.

Arrived at Pinj Rest Camp after leaving the refrigerator at the foot of the range some two hours carry back.

Some native foods purchased and supplemented by carried rations.

23. Wednesday 27th. April.

Party sent back to bring in refrigerator cabinet and remainder of patrol rested. The refrigerator and other heavy loads then ferried onto TUGUP bridge site.

Foods purchased during the day sufficient for needs.

24. Thursday 28th. April.

Moved to TUGUP and remade the native swing bridge over the Lai River befors ferrying heavy loads onto KIP.

Purchased foods and remained TUGUP Overnight.

25. Friday 29th. April.

Departed TUGUP 0700 hrs. with a large number of local natives assisting with the heavy loads, which were making exceptionally good time.

Arrived Egenda 1500 hrs. and pushed onto NIPA arriving 1730 hrs. Patrol stood down.

26. Thursday 5th. May.

Both Officers visited INJIP Village and returned station for the night.

27. Sunday 8th. May.

Mr. Hoad ascended Mt. Arep, a peak north of the station, to make mapping observations and correct existing maps.

28th. Monday 9th. May.

Both Officers visited PULIM Village and returned station for the night.

29. Wednesday 12th. May.

Both Officers visited KUARE Village and returned station for the night.

30. Saturday 14th. May.

Both Officers visited Egenda Village and returned station for the night.

31. Tuesday 17th. May.

Mr. Butler visited Komia Village and returned station for the night.

32. Wednesday 25th. May.

Mr. Butler and patrol departed station 1200 hrs. and after passing through HOBAL Ceremonial ground arrived at WOIYA Ceremonial ground at 1440 hrs.

Camp erected and native foods purchased.

After talks with the people, peanut seed was distributed and some hints on cultivation given. The people were asked to show the growing peanuts to future Officers visited the area so that any necessary advice could be given.

Good contact made and some usefull information regarding surrounding groups obtained.

33. Thursday 26th. May.

Departed at 0945 hrs. after further talks with the people and after passing though KIL and OGUM Hamlets and crossing the low divide. arrived at KANDI Ceremonial ground on the banks of the Wage River.at 1330 hrs.

Camp erected and ample foods purchased.

After talks with the people peanut seed was again distributed and hints on cultivation given.

Good contact made and some details of grouping gathered.

34. Friday 27th. May.

After conversation with the people moved on at 1000 hrs. and after passing through SUMA Group ceremonial grounds and hamlets arrived at TUMBERA Ceremonial ground at 1230 hrs.

The patrol walked through a stand of timber trees, native name PEAL and possible a type of Artic Beech. The stand is 70 to 80% pure and contains 50% millable trees many of which are tall and straight rising 40 to 80 feet without branches.

Camp erected and ample foods purchased before talks which

again went quite well.

35. Saturday 28th. May.

A runner from NIPA arrived with word of possible trouble at Egenda near NIPA and the patrol, after furthervtalks with the people, departed at 1000 hrs. arrived at NIPA at 1200 hrs.

The patrol stood down and Egenda troubles investigated.

36. Sunday 29th. May.

Both Officers proceeded to Egenda where the death of native KOMP, who had died after absonnding from Mendi Hospital, was investigated. The people were instructed to take no action and that settlement of the matter would be made upon the return from Hospital af other persons involved.

Returned to station for the night.

END OF PATROL

INTRODUCTION:

This report covers patrolling activities from NIPA Post during the period from the 11th. March, 1960 to the 29th. May, 1960 during which time a total of 36 days were spent off the station in Native Affairs activities and a further period of 12 days were spent at Mendi District Headquarters.

The report covers one trip which involved investigation and adjudication in a matter of inter-village killing, this matter was settled by "Moga" death compensation payment, (Vide Section II Native Affairs.). Rough preliminary census was carried out in three villages as an aid to contact and consolidation of influence and in all villages visited the people were told of the Administration aims and objectives and of benefits which could be theirs through co-operation with the Government. Discussion was always invited and many matters, closer to the people's everyday life were discussed.

Mr. R.A.Hoad Patrol Officer Gr.I, posted to duty at NIPA joined the patrol at Mendi and returned to NIPA with it. On this trip, several heavy items, of a bulk which denied transportation by Sesana Aircraft, were carried out. Chief among them being the cabinet of a refrigerator.

This report is being compiled whilst conducting Patrol No.5 of 1959/60 which was commenced three days after the completion of the patrol, subject of this report, therefore submission will be delayed until completion of Patrol No. 5.

NATIVE AFFAIRS:

I The native situation within a one and one half mile radius of NIPA Station and along the NIPA/MENDI L of C, is now quite good. Mission and Administration personnel may move freely through the area with no fear of antagonism or threat from the villages.

Within this area the people are beginning to have some understanding of modern law and order, and while occassional breaches of peace will certainly result in injuries from bow and arrow, axe or spear, it does seem that there will be no more inter-village fighting.

If all progresses in the next few months, as in the past months, the people of this NIPA area should be at a stage where they understand a little, appreciate and respect. Court justice and arrest of offenders against the law, by native constable.

Several matters have been brought to NIPA for settlement however these cases did not result in formal court action and were settled administratively.

Outside the one and one half mile radius from NIPA the native situation varies from group to group and seems to depend upon the previous contact made by Administration patrols, the time interval since the last patrol and the type of contact then made.

Between NIPA and the WAGE River, to the northeast, the general atmosphere appears good and the people, yet somewhat timid and uncertain what is expected of them, endeavoured to co-operate with the patrol. Further intensive patrolling of this area, as is planned during the period July to December 1960, should help the people come to a happy and less uncertain relationship with the Government.

South from NIPA, towards the WE and EMIA Creeks, the situation varies. It appears as one moves south that the people become more and more arrogant and less willing to co-operate and there is great uncertainty among them. Some of the younger leaders appear to be responsible for this attitude and every endeavour was made to convince those contacted of the good intentions of the patrol

Patrol No. 5 is operating in this area and attempts to convince the people of the intentions, aims and objectives of the Administration will be made.

It appears at this time that this area will be troublesome for some time to come and that any improvement will be slow. There will be further patrolling in the area during the period July to December 1960.

All in all the situation is compatible with the amount of contact and length of time which has elapsed since NIPA was established. In relationship to the past reputation of these people the situation is vastly improved and heartening.

NATIVES AFFAIRS:

II As reported in the Diary, 11th. to 14th. March, the patrol investigated and was present at settlement of a killing which took place in the WE Creek area.

Facts of the matter were:-

Two youths of SOLA Hamlet, TSEMIN Group, went to a Pandanus Grove on the ridges to the Southeast of SOLA, to collect Pandanus nuts. While there a youth of KUBURAHAN Hamlet, Tembil Group, fired and arrow which struck one TSEMIN youth in the back, killing him immediately.

It was acknowledged by the TEMBIL people that PUR/ISUWE of KUBURUHAN had fired the arrow killing ISALAP/AR of SOLA.

There was no reason for the killing apart from the age-old enmity between the two groups.

The Tembil people stated that after the visit of NIPA Patrol No. 2 to their village during January, 1960, they had refrained

from making attackes of any kind upon their enemies and that this killing had been without the authcurity of the Group Leaders. The TSEMIN people agreed that there had been no other incidents since Patrol No. 2 and that the killing had been carried out by the youth in question.

A compensation "Moga" payment of twelve items of wealth was arranged and the TEMBIL Group agreed to hand this over in the presence of the patrol.

The Tembil brought forward eighteen items of wealth; 11 Mother of Pearl Sheal, 3 Pigs, 2 Bundles of native salt, 1 rope of cowrie shell and 1 bamboo of tree oil, and with a short speech in which they stated that the six extra items were to signify the cessation of all hostility between the groups, handed the items over to the Tsemin.

Both groups were then addressed and told that any further breaches of the rule of peace, promulgated by Patrol No. 2, would be much more severely punished.

NATIVE AFFAIRS:

III Whilst it is realised that at the present stage of contact with the people, a real and good census cannot be carried out, rough preliminary census was, and it is planned will be, carried out where-ever conditions appear such that some success may be had. Mainly as a means of extending contact and influence to more of the population than would be otherwise, but secondarily to aid estimation of population.

During these rough census attention is directed mainly to discovering and recording details of groupings and to instruction of the people in the mechanism and meaning of census.

The recording of names was carried out in the normal census manner in outdated Census books, however absenteeism, whether brought to the attention of the patrol or not, was accepted and the people told that any names not recorded could be recorded by later patrols. The patrol did not make an issue of full attendance or the lack thereof.

TEMBIL Census: 255 names recorded.

While there was some fear and timidity towards the census the people themselves expressed desire to see the matter completed and the patrol stayed until all were satisfied, thus extending contact and influence to a group previously exposed to fleeting visits only. The mere fact that an Administration patrol had remained in the Village area for four days without harm or injury to the village or villagers, can do nothing but good and should allay some of the fear with which these people had looked upon us.

PULIM Census: 275 names recorded.

The census here was carried out in an atmosphere of co-operation far beyond that expected or that which could be expected from a group such as this. This should have a good effect upon future census in neighbouring groups.

EGENDA Census: 385 names recorded.

This Census was not assisted by the co-operation as above but was carried out without fear on the part of the Villagers who have had more contact with patrols, and with the Mendi Valley, than any other group in the Nembi area.

Necessarily, population figures from these rough census, while giving an absolute minimum, are not accurate.

666----------

NATIVE AGRICULTURE AND LIVESTOCK:

The peoples in the areas patrolled practice typical Highlands type subsistence gardening, shifting their gardens from season to season throughout the group owned land.

The basic food crop is sweet potatoe, however in some areas large taro and banana gardens produce amounts of food which must closely rival the staple sweetpotatoe.

Quality of sweet potatoe varies greatly and while some group near NIPA and North west towards the Wage River, produce good sized vegetables, the people Southeast from NIPA appear to produce only small vegetables. Future patrols will investigate this in an attempt to determine whether it is soil, variety of planting material or possibly that patrols are only shown and sold the poorest quality vegetables. When the matter is clarified relevant information will be passed onto the Agricultural Officer Mendi.

Secondary crops are numerous and appear to produce well in all areas visited. Native beans - a spiked pod variety in particular with purple seeds - were always in evidence and with native green leaf of all kinds were always purchased in large quantities.

Peanut seed was distributed in most of the areas visited and the people were given some instruction in its cultivation. The people were told that when available seed of other types of vegetables would be districuted by patrols and that when visiting NIPA they could obtain supplies of seedlings from the multiplication gardens there.

The people visited keep only pigs and dogs. All animals seen were healthy and quite good for their type. Of interest are the "Nembi" Five-toed pigs which are highly valued here and the envy of the people towards Mendi. These pigs are of high ceremonial value and the two specimen seen were of quite large size. All reports of these pigs, emphasises their ceremonial value and great size, however whether it is the actual variety of pig which gives this size or merely the fact that the ceremonial value attached to them ensures that they are well fed and kept longer than the more normally toed pig.

All dogs seen were of the normal Highland 'Village Dog' type, showing little evidence of European breeds and while varying somewhat in color and markings, in shape, size and general appearance appear to come from the same mould as the "Giluwe Dog" or Canis Papuensis.

On two occassions the patrol saw caged cassowary, however this does not seem to be common practice, the birds being caught alive more by good luck than good hunting. Such capture results in very high profit to the men involved in the capture.

MEDICAL AND HEALTH:

The general health of the people, in relationship to their stage of contact, appears good with but a normal incident of infected sores, scabies etc. and little evidence of tropical ulcers, yaws and kindred infections.

No information was gathered concerning illness of other types and deaths mentioned by the people were mainly due to arrow, spear and axe. Again a graphic descriptionnof death from arrow puncture wound was given and again this was almost a text book description of death from tetanus.

Five cases of advanced leprosy were seen and this would indicate that a medical patrol would find that a percentage of the population may suffer from this disease.

Many of the men show signs of old arrow wounds in scars, atrophying of limbs, malfunctioning joints and fibrous growths. This is indicative of the widespread fighting which has taken place in the area during the pastvyears.

Simple medical treatment was given all village persons willing to accept the treatment and several serious cases were evacuated to Mendi Hospital, however at no time were the people forced to accept treatment or evacuation.

EDUCATION:

Nil.

ROADS AND BRIDGES:

There are no vehicular roads in the area and it will be some time before such work is commenced, however for the most part there will be no major difficulties in extending roads from NIPA along the Nembi Valley, to the WE Creek area and into the Wage Valley.

The large supplies of river gravel available should assist in the construction of these roads and the forming of good vehicular surfaces.

VILLAGE OFFICIALS:

There are no Village Officials in the area, however future patrols will select and make recommendations as the more influential persons become known. It appears that there is no one Village or Group leader, but that a number of wealthy, influential men form what could loosely be termed a 'Council of Elders', and it is from these men that it is hoped the Village Constables will be drawn.

CENSUS:

Refer NATIVE AFFAIRS Section III.

A formal census of the area will not be attempted until the native situation is more stable, however the rough census being carried out will form a good basis on which the true intitial census may be based.

ANTHROPOLOGICAL:

Nil.

MISSIONS:

There is at present only one Mission, the Methodist Overseas Mission, working full time in the Nembi area. The Cupuchin Mission from Mendi, do visit Nipa Station at intervals of two or three months and plan to commence full time work in the area whenever staff conditions permit.

Both Mission operate under Restricted areas permits which restrict their activities to a one and one half mile limit around Nipa and neither has requested extension of this limit, nor do they foresee requests for extension for some months to come.

M.O.M. Staff

Rev. C.J.Keightley, wife and three children.

At present resident at Nipa Station the Rev Keightley is building a station at the land called PURIL one and one half miles from Nipa. (Vide Diary 4th. to 6th. April.)

John Teu, wife and family.

From the British Solomon Islands, John Teu is resident at Nipa Station and building the Mission station at Puril under the direction of the Rev. Keightley.

Cap. Miss Staff.

Various priests have resided at Nipa Station for periods of two to four weeks and have yet made no moves to acquire land for a Mission station.

MAPPING:

A tracing of an aerial contour map of unknown origin but apparent reasonable accuracy is submitted with this report. If copies of this map could be printed it could form the basis of mapping in this area. The Fourmile series does not show detail of any kind.

Without a compass of any kind there is no possibility of mapping the area, or of making corrections and additions to any existing maps.

END OF REPORT

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Patrol Report No. 4 of 1959/60 NIPA S.H.D.

Patrol Conducted by: D. M. BUTLER Patrol Officer Gr.II

Area Patrolled: NEMBI Valley, NIPA/NEMDI L of C.

Patrol Accompanied by: (1) Rev. C.J. Keightley 4/4/60 : 6/4/60
(2) R.A.Hoad P.O.Gr.I Return NEMDI/ NIPA and Village Inspections.
(3) R.P.& N.G.C. Varying numbers.
Carriers Varying numbers.

Duration: 11/3/60 to 29/5/60.
36 days in broken periods.

Did Medical Assistant Accompany? No

Last Patrol to area By: Native Affairs 2/60
P.H.D. Nil

Map Reference: Fourmile series covers in no detail.
Sketch map accompanies.

Objects of Patrol: (1) Investigate reported unrest WE Crk
(2) Consolidation and extension of influence.
(3) Rough preliminary Census where practicable
(4) Preliminary investigation N.C.M. Station site.

D. M. BUTLER

Officer-in-Charge, NIPA.

DIARY

1. Friday 11th. March.

Departed NIPA 1045 hrs. and arrived EBIL Ceremonial Ground 1245 hrs. where the patrol halted for 30? minutes and talked with the villagers before moving on.

After walking in torrential rain for 1½ hours arrived at MOBERA Ceremonial Ground at 1500 hrs.

The people appeared surly and unwilling to co-operate and it was only after some time spent in conversation that they went off to assist with the gathering of tent poles and eventually camp was erected with their help. A very small amount of food was purchased and supplemented by carried rations.

No attempt was made to discuss the alleged killing and the people were told that until attempts had been made to contact the offending group the matter was held in abeyance.

2. Saturday 12th. March.

By 1030 hrs. some 200 or so SOLA Group men were gathered at the camp and a group of 80-100 could be seen gathered on a nearby ridge top. They were reputedly the TEMBIL people, offenders in the matter in hand.

The SOLA were made sit quietly to one side of the camp and the TEMBIL invited to come down to discuss matters. This they refused to do with much brandishing of axes, bows and arrows and a flood of insults and abuse, however at about 1230 hrs. a dozen or so older men entered the camp area bringing with them a very large pig.

Three spokesmen from each group were brought together between the two groups of people and the whole matter discussed. After some hours all agreed to a "Moga" payment of 12 items for the youth who had been killed.

The large pig was purchased by the patrol and after being fastened behind a fighting pallisade, was shot by a volley from half the detachment of police. This made a very effective demonstration of firepower and suitably impressed members of both groups who examined the mutilated carcase before going off to their houses.

3. Sunday 13th. March.

The day was spent in discussions with the SOLA leaders concerning nearby groups and hamlets and sub-groups within the large SOLA group. The details are of doubtful accuracy as there became apparent very poor interpretation, whether because the interpreter had a poor grasp of the dialect or through his laziness could not be ascertained.

Some native foods purchased and supplemented by carried rations.

The general atmosphere was not good and the people still appear surly and unco-operative.

At 1830 hrs. two young TEMBIL men appeared at the camp with nine items for the "Moga" payment and remained with the patrol overnight.

4. Monday 14th. March.

At 0730 hrs. six Tembil leaders arrived at the camp and in the presence of the patrol and the Sola people, laid out eighteen items for the "Moga" payment. Their apparent leader, or spokesman, made a speech in which he told the Sola that the six extra items were to signify the cessation of all hostility between the two groups.

The gathered people were given a short address and at 1000 hrs. the patrol moved off with the 8 Tembil men, arriving at ENJUM Ceremonial ground at 1130 hrs. where 100 or more men were gathered.

Camp was quickly set up and ample foods purchased.

By 1400 hrs. there were 450 or more men, women and children at the camp and they were told of census and its meaning and all agreed that they would appear for census tomorrow.

Details of surrounding groups and hamlets and sub-groups within Tembil group were discussed with the leaders.

The general atmosphere appears good and the people to be making an attempt to co-operate.

5. Tuesday 15th. March.

The day started with some 400 people gathered by 0900 hrs. and the census was again explained to them and a start made on organising them into family groups. While the first families were being interviewed the remaining people began to disappear and it was noticed that Mendi Patrol Carriers were in quiet conversation with the people who remained. These people then got up and left the Ceremonial Ground.

It appeared, though no confirmation could be made, that the carriers, mainly from the Mendi Valley, had told the people Census was merely a blind to atrocities, violence and injustice which would come later.

After some discussion with the village leaders, a family group of 37 came forward and their names were recorded. The 100 men who had returned without women or children, then offered themselves for census but when it was explained that names were wanted in family groups offered to return tomorrow with their families.

No anger was shewn at any time and the people were told

that they had no reason to fear the Administration or its patrols.

Again interpretation was poor and made a difficult situation even more difficult. With good interpretation the situation could have been saved but the young man interpreting, the only person available, appeared to render statements incompletely and was inattentive and lazy.

At 1630 hrs. a large group of men, women and children entered the camp and ample foods were purchased. The hours until dusk were spent talking with the people and many subjects were discussed.

The people still apear to be trying to co-operate and today's fiasco seems to be no fault of theirs.

6. Wednesday 16th. March.

A small group of men visited the camp in the early morning and during discussion with them it became apparent that the interpreter was, and had been in the past days, mis-interpreting statements and adding threats of violence to the writer's requests and statements, however with no check upon his interpretation no court action can be taken.

The interpreter was severely reprimanded and stood down from duty. An attempt was made to use the Mendi A.P.O. as interpreter and after several hours of struggling the patrol began to make headway.

The men went back to their houses to collect food after asking that the patrol remain longer so that the census could be made.

The writer climbed a nearby peak with several of the leaders and was shewn nearby hamlets, ceremonial grounds and gardens belonging to the Tembil.

A large amount of food was purchased and many women and children remained at the camp talking with the writer.

7. Thursday 17th. March.

At 0830 hrs. a start was made on the census of the 350 or so people who were gathered and all went well until midday when an aircraft was heard in the direction of NIPA station. All the people present crowded to the side of the ceremonial ground to watch the aircraft, when suddenly there was a cry "There is another patrol coming and we will all be killed!" and with screams and shouts the people frantically ran from the ceremonial ground.

The patrol was ordered to remain fast and to make no move and no immediate action was taken, except to have a good hard look in the direction indicated. After about five minutes the cause of panic appeared again on a distant ridge and proved to be a group of natives, one of whom carried a bunch of bananas covered with dried banana leaves. When relayed to the people this gave rise to much laughter and after about 30 minutes or so many returned

[illegible]

and the census recommenced. At 1600 hrs the census of all those who had returned was completed with 255 names recorded and the people were told that the missing names would be recorded by later patrols.

The time until dark was spent talking with the people with them taking the lead in broaching many subjects.

8. Friday 18th. March.

Departed 0800 hrs. and arrived PULIM Ceremonial ground at 1200 hrs. Same camp was erected with the help of the Pulim people.

Talked with the people and arranged to carry out census tomorrow when another interpreter had arrived.

Ample foods purchased.

9. Saturday 19th. March.

People assembled at 0930 hrs. and organised quite readily into family groups. The Census was completed at 1530 hrs with very little trouble and 275 names recorded.

Time until dusk spent in conversation with the people.

Ample foods purchased.

10. Sunday 20th. March.

After further discussion with the people, the patrol departed at 1000 hrs. and arrived at NIPA at 1035 hrs. en route EGENLA Ceremonial ground only to find the Kgenda men had commenced thatching the new residence. It was decided to wait the completion of thatching and the patrol was stood down.

11. Friday 25th. March.

Writer visited KUARE Ceremonial ground on village inspection. Returned station for the night.

12. ~~Thursday~~ Monday 28th. March

Writer visited INJIP Ceremonial ground on village inspection. Returned station for the night.

13. Thursday 31st. March.

Writer visited KOMIA Village on inspection. Returned Station for the night.

14. Monday 4th. April.

Departed station 1000 hrs. accompanied by Rev. C.J. Knightley M.O.M. and arrived at a garden area between WOLAL and YOLAL Villages at 1100 hrs. Camp erected .

Walked around the surrounding area with the local people and discussed~~s~~ several suitable mission sites with them.

Purchased sufficient foods,

15. Tuesday 5th. April.

Again walked the surrounding areas and settled on a site on ground known as PURIL which was suitable to both the Rev. Keightley and the owners. This ground is approximately one and a half miles from NIPA.

No compass and chain available and so no traverse could be made, however the patrol did walk around the proposed boundaries with the owners who were happy to sell the land.

16. Wednesday 6th. April.

Again walked over the proposed site which is 45 to 50 acres in extent and includes only one acre or so under garden. The soil appeared quite good and there seems no reason why it should not be good garden land. The owners have ample land elsewhere, which perhaps explains why this land is not used.

Camp broken and the party returned to NIPA at 1430 hrs where the patrol members were stood down.

17. Saturday 9th. April.

Departed NIPA 1000 hrs. and arrived Egenda Ceremonial Ground 1130 hrs where camp erected.

Ample foods purchased and general discussions with the people arranging to make the census tomorrow.

18. Sunday 10th. April.

Census commenced at 0900 hrs. and 175 names recorded before rain interrupted just after midday.

Talks with the leaders during the afternoon and several disputes settled out of court.

Ample foods purchased.

19. Monday 11th. April.

Recommenced census and completed it at 1430 hrs. with 385 names recorded.

Talks with the people during the remainder of the day.

Ample foods purchased.

20. Tuesday 12th. April.

Departed Egenda at 0820 hrs. with all NIPA personnel and arrived at the flooded Lai River at 1300 hrs. to find only one bridge remaining and that partially under water, and many sections of the upstream track under water. Arrived Arop Rest House at 1515 after a hard slog.

Purchased a small amount of food and issued carried rations.

21. Wednesday 13th. April.

Departed 0700 hrs. and after a hard walk arrived at the Tulwa Rest Camp at 1010 hrs. where the patrol rested until informed that one bridge was unserviceable. Continued on along the motor road until meeting the Land Rover at 1230 hrs.

Arrived Mendi 1330 hrs. and the patrol stood down.

22. Tuesday 26th. April.

Departed Mendi at 1400 hrs. accompanied by Mr. Head P.O.I who is posted to NIPA. and picked up the main body of the patrol at 1500 hrs. making very slow time with the refrigerator cabinet.

Arrived at Pinj Rest Camp after leaving the refrigerator at the foot of the range some two hours carry back.

Some native foods purchased and supplemented by carried rations.

23. Wednesday 27th. April.

Party sent back to bring in refrigerator cabinet and remainder of patrol rested. The refrigerator and other heavy load then ferried onto TUGUP bridge site.

Foods purchased during the day sufficient for needs.

24. Thursday 28th. April.

Moved to TUGUP and remade the native swing bridge over the Lai River before ferrying heavy loads onto NIP.

Purchased foods and remained TUGUP Overnight.

25. Friday 29th. April.

Departed TUGUP 0700 hrs. with a large number of local natives assisting with the heavy loads, which were making exceptionally good time.

Arrived Egenda 1500 hrs. and pushed onto NIPA arriving 1730 hrs. Patrol stood down.

26. Thursday 5th. May.

Both Officers visited INJIP Village and returned station for the night.

27. Sunday 8th. May.

Mr. Head ascended Mt. Arep, a peak north of the station, to make mapping observations and correct existing maps.

28th. Monday 9th. ~~June~~May.

Both Officers visited PULIM Village and returned station for the night.

29. Wednesday 12th. May.

Both Officers visited KUARE Village and returned station for the night.

30. Saturday 14th. May.

Both Officers visited Egenda Village and returned station for the night.

31. Tuesday 17th. May.

Mr. Butler visited Komia Village and returned station for the night.

32. Wednesday 25th. May.

Mr. Butler and patrol departed station 1200 hrs. and after passing through HORAL Ceremonial ground arrived at WOIYA Ceremonial ground at 1440 hrs.

Camp erected and native foods purchased.

After talks with the people, peanut seed was distributed and some hints on cultivation given. The people were asked to show the growing peanuts to future Officers visited the area so that any necessary advice could be given.

Good contact made and some usefull information regarding surrounding groups obtained.

33. Thursday 26th. May.

Departed at 0945 hrs. after further talks with the people and after passing though KIL and OGUN Hamlets and crossing the low divide, arrived at KANDI Ceremonial ground on the banks of the Wage River at 1330 hrs.

Camp erected and ample foods purchased.

After talks with the people peanut seed was again distributed and hints on cultivation given.

Good contact made and some details of grouping gathered.

34. Friday 27th. May.

After conversation with the people moved on at 1000 hrs. and after passing through SUMA Group ceremonial grounds and hamlets arrived at TUMBERA Ceremonial ground at 1230 hrs.

The patrol walked through a stand of timber trees, native name PEAL and possible a type of Artic Beech. The stand is 70 to 80% pure and contains 50% millable trees many of which are tall and straight rising 40 to 80 feet without branches.

Camp erected and ample foods purchased before talks which

[illegible] went quite well.

35. Saturday 28th. May.

A runner from NIPA arrived with word of possible trouble at Egenda near NIPA and the patrol, after further talks with the people, departed at 1000 hrs. arrived at NIPA at 1200 hrs.

The patrol stood down and Egenda troubles investigated.

36. Sunday 29th. May.

Both Officers proceeded to Egenda where the death of native KOMP, who had died after absconding from Mendi Hospital, was investigated. The people were instructed to take no action and that settlement of the matter would be made upon the return from Hospital af other persons involved.

Returned to station for the night.

END OF PATROL

INTRODUCTION:

This report covers patrolling activities from NIPA Post during the period from the 11th. March, 1960 to the 29th. May, 1960 during which time a total of 36 days were spent off the station in Native Affairs activities and a further period of 12 days were spent at Mendi District Headquarters.

The report covers one trip which involved investigation and adjudication in a matter of inter-village killing, this matter was settled by "Moga" death compensation payment, (Vide Section II Native Affairs.). Rough preliminary census was carried out in three villages as an aid to contact and consolidation of influence and in all villages visited the people were told of the Administration aims and objectives and of benefits which could be theirs through co-operation with the Government. Discussion was always invited and many matters, closer to the people's everyday life were discussed

Mr. R.A.Hoad Patrol Officer Gr.I, posted to duty at NIPA joined the patrol at Mendi and returned to NIPA with it. On this trip, several heavy items, of a bulk which denied transportation by Cessna Aircraft were carried out. Cheif among these being the cabinet of a refrigerator.

This report is being compiled whilst conducting Patrol No.5 of 1959/60 which was commenced three days after the completion of the patrol, subject of this report, therefore submission will be delayed until completion of Patrol No. 5.

NATIVE AFFAIRS:

I The native situation within a one and one half mile radius of NIPA Station and along the NIPA/MENDI L of C, is now quite good. Mission and Administration personnel may move freely through the area with no fear of antagonism or threat from the villages.

Within this area the people are beginning to have some understanding of modern law and order, and while occassional breaches of peace will certainly result in injuries from bow and arrow, axe or spear, it does seem that there will be no more inter-village fighting.

If all progresses in the next few months, as in the past months, the people of this NIPA area should be at a stage where they understand a little, appreciate and respect. Court justice and arrest of offenders against the law, by native constable.

Several matters have been brought to NIPA for settlement however these cases did not result in formal court action and were settled administratively.

Outside the one and one half mile radius from NIPA the native situation varies from group to group and seems to depend upon the previous contact made by Administration patrol, the time interval since the last patrol and the type of contact then made.

Between NIPA and the WAGE River, to the northeast, the general atmosphere appears good and the people, yet somewhat timid and uncertain what is expected of them, endeavoured to co-operate with the patrol. Further intensive patrolling of this area, as is planned during the period July to December 1960, should help the people come to a happy and less uncertain relationship with the Government.

South from NIPA, towards the WE and EMIA Creeks, the situation varies. It appears as one moves south that the people become more and more arrogant and less willing to co-operate and there is great uncertainty among them. Some of the younger leaders appear to be responsible for this attitude and every endeavour was made to convince those contacted of the good intentions of the patrol.

Patrol No. 5 is operating in this area and attempts to convince the people of the intentions, aims and objectives of the Administration will be made.

It appears at this time that this area will be troublesome for some time to come and that any improvement will be slow. There will be further patrolling in the area during the period July to December 1960.

All in all the situation is compatible with the amount of contact and length of time which has elapsed since NIPA was established. In relationship to the past reputation of these people the situation is vastly improved and heartening.

NATIVES AFFAIRS:

II As reported in the Diary, 11th. to 14th. March, the patrol investigated and was present at settlement of a killing which took place in the WE Creek area.

Facts of the matter were:-

Two youths of SOLA Hamlet, TSEMIN Group, went to a Pandanus Grove on the ridges to the Southeast of SOLA, to collect Pandanus nuts. While there a youth of KUBURAHAN Hamlet, Tembil Group, fired and arrow which struck one TSEMIN youth in the back, killing him immediately.

It was acknowledged by the TEMBIL people that PUR/ISUWE of KUBURUHAN had fired the arrow killing ISALAP/AR of SOLA.

There was no reason for the killing apart from the age-old enmity between the two groups.

The Tembil people stated that after the visit of NIPA Patrol No. 2 to their village during January, 1960, they had refrained

from making attackes of any kind upon their enemies and that this killing had been without the authourity of the Group Leaders. The TSEMIN people agreed that there had been no other incidents since Patrol No. 2 and that the killing had been carried out by the youth in question.

A compensation "Moga" payment of twelve items of wealth was arranged and the TEMBIL Group agreed to hand this over in the presence of the patrol.

The Tembil brought forward eighteen items of wealth; 11 Mother of Pearl Shell, 3 Pigs, 2 Bundles of native salt, 1 rope of cowrie shell and 1 bamboo of tree oil, and with a short speech in which they stated that the six extra items were to signify the cessation of all hostility between the groups, handed the items over to the Tsemin.

Both groups were then addressed and told that any further breaches of the rule of peace, promulgated by Patrol No. 2, would be much more severely punished.

NATIVE AFFAIRS:

III Whilst it is realised that at the present stage of contact with the people, a real and good census cannot be carried out, rough preliminary census was, and it is planned will be, carried out where-ever conditions appear such that some success may be had. Mainly as a means of extending contact and influence to more of the population than would be otherwise, but secondarily to aid estimation of population.

During these rough census attention is directed mainly to discovering and recording details of groupings and to instruction of the people in the mechanism and meaning of census.

The recording of names was carried out in the normal census manner in outdated Census books, however absenteeism, whether brought to the attention of the patrol or not, was accepted and the people told that any names not recorded could be recorded by later patrols. The patrol did not make an issue of full attendance or the lack thereof.

TEMBIL Census: 255 names recorded.

While there was some fear and timidity towards the census the people themselves expressed desire to see the matter completed and the patrol stayed until all were satisfied, thus extending contact and influence to a group previously exposed to fleeting visits only. The mere fact that an Administration patrol had remained in the Village area for four days without harm or injury to the village or villagers, can do nothing but good and should allay some of the fear with which these people had looked upon us.

PULIM Census: 275 names recorded.

The census here was carried out in an atmosphere of co-operation far beyond that expected or that which could be expected from a group such as this. This should have a good effect upon future census in neighbouring groups.

EGENDA Census: 385 names recorded.

This Census was not assisted by the co-operation as above but was carried out without fear on the part of the Villagers who have had more contact with patrols, and with the Mendi Valley, than any other group in the Nembi area.

Necessarily, population figures from these rough census, while giving an absolute minimum, are not accurate.

666----------

NATIVE AGRICULTURE AND LIVESTOCK:

The peoples in the areas patrolled practice typical Highlands type subsistence gardening, shifting their gardens from season to season throughout the group owned land.

The basic food crop is sweet potatoe, however in some areas large taro and banana gardens produce amounts of food which must closely rival the staple sweetpotatoe.

Quality of sweet potatoe varies greatly and while some groups near NIPA and North west towards the Wage River, produce good sized vegetables, the people Southeast from NIPA appear to produce only small vegetables. Future patrols will investigate this in an attempt to determine whether it is soil, variety of planting material or possibly that patrols are only shown and sold the poorest quality vegetables. When the matter is clarified relevant information will be passed onto the Agricultural Officer Mendi.

Secondary crops are numerous and appear to produce well in all areas visited. Native beans - a spiked pod variety in particular with purple seeds - were always in evidence and native green leaf of all kinds were always purchased in large quantities.

Peanut seed was distributed in most of the areas visited and the people were given some instruction in its cultivation. The people were told that when available seed of other types of vegetables would be districuted by patrols and that when visiting NIPA they could obtain supplies of seedlings from the multiplication gardens there.

The people visited keep only pigs and dogs. All animals seen were healthy and quite good for their type. Of interest are the "Mombi" Five-toed pigs which are highly valued by and the envy of the people towards Mendi. These pigs are of high ceremonial value and the two specimen seen were of quite large size. All reports of these pigs, emphasises their ceremonial value and great size, however whether it is the actual variety of pig which gives this size or merely the fact that the ceremonial value attached to them ensures that they are well fed and kept longer than the more normally toed pig.

All dogs seen were of the normal Highland 'Village Dog' type, showing little evidence of European breeds and while varying somewhat in color and markings, in shape, size and general appearance appear to come from the same mould as the "Giluwe Dog" or Canis Papuensis.

On two occassions the patrol saw caged cassowary, however this does not seem to be common practice, the birds being caught alive more by good luck than good hunting. Such capture results in very high profit to the men involved in the capture.

MEDICAL AND HEALTH:

The general health of the people, in relationship to their stage of contact, appears good with but a normal incident of infected sores, scabies etc. and little evidence of tropical ulcers, yaws and kindred infections.

No information was gathered concerning illness of other types and deaths mentioned by the people were mainly due to arrow, spear and axe. Again a graphic descriptionnof death from arrow puncture would was gaiven and again this was almost a text book description of death from tetanus.

Five cases of advancci leprosy were seen and this would indicate that a medical patrol would find that a percentage of the population may suffer from this disease.

Many of the men show signs of old arrow wounds in scars, atrophying of limbs, malfunctioning joints and fibrousngrowths. This is indicative of the widespread fighting which has taken place in the area during the pastvyears.

Simple medical treatment was given all village persons willing to accept the treatment and several serious cases were evacuated to Mendi Hospital, however at no time were the people forced to accept treatment or evacuation.

EDUCATION:

Nil.

ROADS AND BRIDGES:

There are no vehicular roads in the area and it will be some time before such work is commenced, however for the most part there will be no major difficulties in extending roads from NIPA along the Nembi Valley, to the WE Creek area and into the Wage Valley.

The large supplies of river gravel available should assist in the construction of these roads and the forming of good vehicular surfaces.

VILLAGE OFFICIALS:

There are no Village Officials in the area, however future patrols will select and make recommendations as the more influential persons become known. It appears that there is no one Village or Group leader, but that a number of wealthy, influential men form what could loosely be termed a 'Council of Elders', and it is from those men that it is hoped the Village Constables will be drawn.

CENSUS:

Refer NATIVE AFFAIRS Section III.

A formal census of the area will not be attempted until the native situation is more stable, however the rough census being carried out will form a good basis on which the true intitial census may be based.

ANTHROPOLOGICAL:

Nil.

MISSIONS:

There is at present only one Mission, the Methodist Overseas Mission, working full time in the Nembi area. The Capuchin Mission from Mendi, do visit Nipa Station at intervals of two or three months and plan to commence full time work in the area whenever staff conditions permit.

Both Mission operate under Restricted areas permits which restrict their activities to a one and one half mile limit around Nipa and neither has requested extension of this limit, nor do they foresee requests for extension for some months to come.

M.O.M. Staff

Rev. C.J.Keightley, wife and three children.

At present resident at Nipa Station the Rev Keightley is building a station at the land called PURIL one and one half miles from Nipa. (Vide Diary 4th. to 6th. April.)

John Teu, wife and family.

From the British Solomon Islands, John Teu is resident at Nipa Station and building the Mission station at Puril under the direction of the Rev. Keightley.

Cap. Miss Staff.

Various priests have resided at Nipa Station for periods of two to four weeks and have yet made no moves to acquire land for a Mission station.

MAPPING:

A tracing of an aerial contour map of unknown origin but apparent reasonable accuracy is submitted with this report. If copies of this map could be printed it could form the basis of mapping in this area. The Fourmile series does not show detail of any kind.

Without a compass of any kind there is no possibility of mapping the area, or of making corrections and additions to any existing maps.

D.A.Butler

END OF REPORT

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORT

District of....[redacted] HIGHLANDS..... Report No....5...KAPA...1959/60.....

Patrol Conducted by.....D.R. BUTLER, Patrol Officer, 1i.....

Area Patrolled.....HELA CREEK.....

Patrol Accompanied by Europeans.....R.A. HOAD, P.O.1.....

Natives.....R.P. & M.C. 1 Interpreter 1
A.P.O. 4 Carriers 32.

Duration—From...2./...6./19..60..to..20./...6./19..60.

Number of Days.....19..... (3 patrol Days)

Did Medical Assistant Accompany?.....No.....

Last Patrol to Area by—District Services...../..3../19..60..

Medical ..../...../19.....

Map Reference.....[redacted] MAP.....

Objects of Patrol.....INVESTIGATION REPORTED FIGHTING IN HELA CREEK AREA.

.....

DIRECTOR OF DISTRICT SERVICES
AND NATIVE AFFAIRS,
PORT MORESBY.

Forwarded, please.

2/7/196

.....
District Commissioner Hfds

Amount Paid for War Damage Compensation .... £.....

Amount Paid from D.N.E. Trust Fund .... £.....

Amount Paid from P.E.D.P. Trust Fund .... £.....

.....

.....

.....

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORT

District of SOUTHERN HIGHLANDS Report No. 5 NIPA 1959/60

Patrol Conducted by D.N. BUTLER, Patrol Officer, 11.

Area Patrolled EMIA CREEK

Patrol Accompanied by Europeans R.A. HOAD, P.O.1

Natives R.P. & NG.C. 7 Interpreter 1
A.P.O. 1 Carriers 32.

Duration—From 2../..6../19.60..to..20../..6../19..60.

Number of Days 19 (38 patrol days)

Did Medical Assistant Accompany?....No.....

Last Patrol to Area by—District Services...../..3.../19.60...

Medical ..../...../19.....

Map Reference SKETCH MAP

Objects of Patrol INVESTIGATION REPORTED FIGHTING IN EMIA CREEK AREA.

.....

DIRECTOR OF DISTRICT SERVICES
AND NATIVE AFFAIRS,
PORT MORESBY.

Forwarded, please.

30 / 7 /19 60

.....
District Commissioner

JSMcL.FG

67-15-53

10th August, 1960.

The District Officer,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

NIPA PATROL REPORT No. 5/59-60

It is unfortunate that Mr Butler's patrol was placed in a rather invidious situation. Not being of adequate strength, as the operation so developed, the whole party are to be commended for the display of patience and tact that undoubtedly saved more serious complications. No doubt if the patrol had immediately left the area after going there, the warring groups would have come to their own conclusions.

The KMIA Creek region seems to be at its most difficult stage of administrative evolution - most of the NIPA Valley are over this touchy period, although formerly not noted for their obsequious attitude to penetrating and consolidating patrols. I hope you are able to arrange further visits to reinforce the work done on this occasion.

You can confidently expect more strife in that sector in the near future. When it does occur it will be necessary to ensure an adequate force to impose law and order - at least while the patrol is in the area.

Unfortunate unforeseen events certainly upset calculations, but it should be possible to organise so that serious situations such as encountered on this occasion are minimised.

Mr Butler is an Officer of experience and he apparently considered he had good reason to split his party already inadequate for the job in hand. If another such situation develops as he reports this one did, he will need to give serious thought before dispersing what little protection he has.

(J.K. McCarthy)
Acting Director.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA. 67-15-53. ✓

File No. 30/1- 145

District Office,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.
29th July, 1960.

DEPARTMENT OF NATIVE AFFAIRS
RECEIVED
3 AUG 1960

Assistant District Officer,
MENDI.

NIPA PATROL NO. 5 of 1959/60

Thank you for Mr. Butler's report on this patrol to the EMIA Creek region of the NIPA Census Division.

It was unfortunate but unavoidable that you were not able to make the rendezvous as planned. Not having a portable wireless available did not help in this instance- however the Cessna flight arranged to check on the patrol was most timely and successful.

A visit to the area b two patrols - one from MENDI and one from NIPA during September should improve the native situation. I shall also arrange for an Erave or Lake Kutubu patrol also to be workin near that area at about that time and make further efforts to have our portable radio sets returned and new batteries provided.

I consider Mr. Butler did a very good job and is to be commended.

(K.W.Dyer.)
District Officer.

The Director,
Department of Native Affairs,
KONEDOBU.

Copy for your information please. Patrol Report in duplicate together with comment by the ADC Mendi is forwarded herewith.

For operations of the sort contemplated in September it would be most desirable to have 2 sets of A 510 equipment in the field at the one time. I have received the new set as advised in your memo. 69-5-1 dated 1st June 1960 however I have still had no success whatever in having our other 2 sets returned from Goroka Goroka.

(K.W.Dyer.)
District Officer.

GS:BT. 67-2-3.

Sub District Office,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

26th July, 1960.

The District Officer,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

NIPA PATROL NO.5-6 1959/60
EMIA CREEK

Please find herewith a Report in triplicate on Nipa Patrol No.5 of 1959/60 to the EMIA Creek conducted by Mr. D.N. Butler Patrol Officer.

Reports at MENDI indicated that five natives had been killed in tribal disturbances in the EMIA Creek area. I decided to mount a patrol to inquire into these disturbances and arranged to rendezvous with Mr. Butler in the EMIA Creek. This was to take place following the TENTE Airstrip purchase Tuesday 31st May and before to the visit of the Supreme Court to the Southern Highlands scheduled for the 6th June. I intended to take a party of eight Native police and another officer into the area to assist Mr. Butler.

Whereas my estimate of the time needed to get to the area concerned and return to MENDI was five days in reality it would have taken seven days in which case I could not have attended the Supreme Court Sitting at Tari.

My failure to reach the rendezvous placed Mr. Butler in an unpleasant position and he did very well to arrange a settlement.

I am not inclined to leave the matter as it stands but intend my next patrol to the UNDIRI scheduled to commence on the 12th September will also patrol the EMIA Creek. Mr. Butler should be able to mount a patrol to that area towards the end of September. We have sufficient staff to make an all out effort to overcome the hostility and ressentment shown to this patrol.

The patrol was more successful than one would have expected and the fortitude and insistence of Mr. Butler and his party will do much to improve the native situation. At least as far as patrols are concerned.

Mr. Butler has conducted another very useful patrol.

Gordon Smith

(GORDON SMITH)
Assistant District Officer.

c.c. O.I.C. NIPA.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Patrol Report No. 5 of 1959/60 NIPA S.H.D.

Patrol Conducted by: D. N. BUTLER Patrol Officer Gr. 11

Area Patrolled: EMIA CREEK

Patrol Accompanied by: (1) R.A. Hoad P.O. Gr. 1
(2) R.P. & N.G.C. 1 N.C.O.
6 Constables 32 Carriers
1 Interpreter 1 A.P.O.

Duration: 2/6/60 to 20/6/60
19 days

Did Medical Assistant Accompany? No

Last Patrol to area by: Native Affairs ~~2/60~~ 3/60
P.H.D. Nil

Map Reference: Sketch map accompanied

Objects of Patrol: Investigate reported fighting in Emia Creek area.

D. N. BUTLER.
Officer-in-Charge, NIPA.

DIARY

1. Thursday 2nd. June.

Departed NIPA 0700 hrs. and arrived at Ebil Ceremonial Ground at 0845 hrs. where guides were picked up. Continued on and arrived at Mobera Ceremonial Ground at 1015 hrs. where we changed guides before continuing on. The Tsemin (Mobera) guides claimed there was no track stradght down the Emia and, as, the patrol wished to move quickly and could not spare time to check this statement, followed them across to the We Creek area to Karamala Ceremonial Ground arriving at 1200 hrs.

Drinking water had been short all along the route and the patrol halted for 45 minutes while a water party was sent to the village watering point. Departed again at 1245 hrs. and arrived at Pumburel Long houses at 1420 hrs.

After some discussion with the Pumburel men camp was erected and foods purchased.

These people appear indifferent to the patrol and there is a certain amount of arrogance. When influence is being extended more strongly in this area, they could give trouble.

2. Friday 3rd. June.

Departed Pumburel at 0855 hrs. after heavy fog rose. There was some difficulty in obtaining guides but eventually two youths agreed to show the way to the patrol.

Arrived at KABIT Ceremonial Ground, Petum Group, at 1100 hrs. The people of this group are alleged to be the cause of reports received at Mendi and the patrol remained to wait the pre-arranged arrival of the Mendi patrol led by the ADO.

A circlet of casuarinas and tangets freshly planted in the ceremonial ground are alleged to indicate the killing and dismembering of the chief fight leader of their tradition-al enemy the Penarop group.

People were in evidence on the ridges and peaks around about and 30 or so men entered the camp to sit with the patrol. They expressed a desire to witness firearms in operation, and a short demonstration was given against a nearby limestone cliff and penetration shewn on a fair sized casuarina.

At 1500 hrs. with no sign of the Mendi patrol, camp was erected with the aid of the villagers with the patrol. Ample foods were purchased.

Heavy rain commenced at 1700 hrs.

No attempt was made to discuss or investigate the alleged fighting as it was not known what reports or inform -ation had been supplied to the ADO. All investigation will be left until his arrival.

3. Saturday 4th. June.

Both officers remained in camp endeavouring to make contact with men from Petum Group. It is alleged that all visitors to the camp both yesterday and today are from outside groups.

Many armed men again in evidence on peaks and ridges above the camp, however few of the visitors enterdd camp with weapons.

The atmosphere is not good and it appears that the people are waiting for the patrol to move on or make some move before committing themselves to action of any kind,

Both officers climbed a limestone peak 1200 feet above the camp to make mapping corrections and observations and to try to see signs of the Mendi patrol.

No signs of the Mendi patrol were seen and it appears that there is some delay to or cancellation of the patrol.

Some native foods purchased from people from outside villages and the women who came in were given peanut seed.

During the evening the men on the ridges and peaks, demanded that the patrol move on as they wished to fight with their enemies. They were told the patrol would move on after they had been to see it.

4. Sunday 5th. June.

Heavy rain until 1000 hrs.

The patrol remained in camp.

Large numbers of armed men still to be seen on the ridges and peaks and a considerable number could be seen gathering at houses within sight of the camp.

At 1100 hrs., a native, smeared with white clay, appeared at the camp with a note from Mr. Smith, ADO Mendi, which informed that his patrol was returning to Mendi to meet Supreme Court commitments. The bearer of the note gave the patrol, and visiting natives, a rather garbled story of wife stealing and a return to this area by Mr. Smith's patrol within six days. He then moved among the local men with whom he appeared to have friendly relationship and when questioned by the writer claimed no knowledge of fighting or killings in this area.

The non arrival of the Mendi patrol left this patrol under strength for action in this area and, with the note-bearer telling the people that the Mendi patrol had moved back to Mendi, it was an uncomfortable position.

Shortly before midday the ~~patrol~~ atmosphere became tense and the patrol carriers became ill at ease. This tense-ness was felt by both officers and though there were no signs of antagonism from the men who would be seen, all police were put on the alert.

No women were visible any where in the valley.

The Petum were invited to enter the camp to discuss the alleged killings and a group of 60 to 80 men and youths came down to the camp. The spokesman, while admitting that they had killed and dismembered an enemy fight leader, refused to have anything to do with adjudication by the patrol and demanded that it depart.

His words, spoken in arrogant and insulting terms, began to stir up the people and as a precautuonary measure he was placed under arrest by the writer. The people were told that such matters were Government business and that, as they had been instructed by Patrol No. 2 of 1959/60, Killings and fighting would be followed by Government intervention.

At one stage the situation had looked extremely ugly, the men cutting the ground with their very long handled axes, and generally behaving in a threatening manner, however they were quietened after the arrest of their leader and a severe lecture given by the writer.

A firearms demonstration by the police detachment was then given, that the people might realise police as well as both officers were effectively armed.

The men stated that other leaders were not at the camp but would appear tomorrow to discuss settlement of the killings.

No foods purchased and carried rations issued.

5. Monday 6th. June.

Heavy rain commenced 0500 hrs. and continued until after midday. A few men from outside villages came to the camp but not one Petum was seen.

At 1500 hrs. a Cessna aircraft circled the camp and was signalled that all was well.

Food was foraged from a nearby garden and payment left in small trade.

Towards evening there was shouting from the ridges that the Petum people would be in tomorrow.

6. Tuesday 7 th. June.

Very heavy rain all night and continuing until after midday. No movement was seen in the surrounding country, and because of the heavy rain all morning and the miserable light drizzle of the afternoon, no attempt was made to induce the people to come to the camp.

Again food foraged from gardens and small trade payment left.

A Petum man made himself known to the Patrol late in the afternoon and after conversation was sent off to tell the people that the patrol would rem in until the Petum people came to the patrol, discussed the alleged killings and arranged settlement of them with their enemies.

7. Wednesday 8 th. June.

After the heavy morning mist cleared at 0900 hrs. men began to move into the camp and by 1030 hrs. there appeared to be a fairly representative group of Petum present.

After discussions these man agreed to accompany the patrol to meet, their enemies and arrange settlement, however it did seem that the more influential men were not present and thus it is possible that the Petum will not abide by this arrangement.

Sufficient foods purchased and issued.

The atmosphere during the day was not good and it seemed that the people were in two minds; whether to try the Government way of settlement, or to make a stand, refuse to accept the patrol's authority and endeavour to force it to move on, however there were no incidents of any kind.

8. Thursday 9 th. June.

A few men gathered at the camp at about 0900 hrs. and informed the patrol that the influential men would not be coming to the patrol, that the Petum did not accept the patrol's authority and that it should move on out of the area.

The camp was secured and at 1030 hrs. after attempt -ing to call the people into the camp, both officers with 4 constables, interpreter and 10 carriers accompanied by a Petum guide left the camp to walk downstream to a Petum hamlet, home of an influential man.

As the party moved slowly downstream the interpreter called to the people asking them to meet the party anywhere along the track. Many armed men could be seen, as always, on the peaks and ridges however echo was the only answer.

The party waited for half an hour at the hamlet near Tibaram ceremonial ground, during which time many more armed men joined those already on the ridges and peaks on both sides of the valley. Just as the order to move back to camp was given it was discovered that the guide, a Petum man who made himself known on Tuesday, had run off.

As the party began to move back the interpreter continued calling, telling the Petum to join with, or follow, the party to the camp and stating that the patrol would remain until they did so. The return was being made from hamlet to hamlet hoping that the people would be more willing to meet the party on their own ground.

As the party left Tibaram ceremonial ground the first answers came from the people. Shouted threats, which despite advice from the party that any action would be foolish, grew in volume until the limestone cliffs rang with shouts of "Kill them" and "Shoot them."

It also became evident that men from other groups were with the Petum and joining in vocal competion with them.

The party was led away from the main track along the Emia Creek, (through dense growth and narrow defiles,) and walked along the northern side of the valley to a hamlet on a ridge above the camp.

While resting here and endeavouring to talk with the people - unsuccessfully, as their shouting drowned the inter-preter's - two arrows were fired by unseen bowmen, one passing over the heads of the party and the other striking the ground about two yards to one side. These arrows were launched from some distance off and appeared to be fired at the general position of the party rather than aimed at certain members.

The area around the party was immediately cleared of growth and protection given the carriers. The people were warned that any further attack would be met with rifle fire.

A short time later the writer fired one warning shot into a stone gluff over the heads of a party who ran, shouting threats, into hiding at the base of the ridge below the patrol, and these men retreated, the shouted threats died down and the interpreter was able to make himself heard as he shouted to the people to cease from the threats and attacks and to meet the patrol on a friendly and sensible footing. It was pointed out that, did the patrol so wish, it could kill men as the stone had been broken but that the people had nothing to fear from firearms unless they continued the attack and endangered party members.

After an hours wait 4 youths came near the party and were persuaded to come into the cleared area where the patrol's aims and objectives were explained. The party then made shouted contact with other men, who stated that they would come to the camp tomorrow, before moving slowly back to the camp.

Two pigs seen at the hamlet were shot with .303 rifles and left on the track as evidence of the effective weapons of the patrol and the people told to examine them and realise that while the patrol would not willingly fire upon them, if it was forced to do so to ensure safety of its members the results would be drastic.

The party returned to camp at 1500 hrs. to find all well.

Shortly before dusk several Petum men brought food for sale and stated that the younger and less wealthy men wished to come to settlement but that the more influential men had, to date, refused to do so. They appeared upset about the attack and wished to be reconciled with the patrol.

Native foods supplemented by carried rations.

9. Friday 10 th. June.

Heavy mist and light rain during most of the day, however shouted conversation with the usual armed men on the ridge tops brought their statement that all the people would be at the camp tomorrow.

Food foraged from gardens and small trade left in payment.

A miserable day and one cannot blame the people for not coming in.

10. Saturday 11 th. June.

At about 1000 hrs. numbers of shouting men gathered at the houses within sight of the camp, all were armed and an old man was seen carrying a bundle of 10 or 15 bows and two youths carried great bundles of arrows.

By 1100 hrs. 100 armed men and youths could be seen and others could be heard shouting. There appeared to be a division of opinion between those for and against attacking the patrol, and it appeared that those against won the day as a group of 60 or 70 entered the camp and listened to a short talk during which they were told that the group as a whole must follow the Government instructions, cease fighting and make settlement with their enemies.

No leaders were present and no real agreement was reached in discussion with the men present. After an hours futile discussion the men drifted off, following a reputed report that their enemies had destroyed a ceremonial ground. No consternation was shewn and perhaps the report was false.

A small amount of food purchased and supplemented by carried rations.

11. Sunday 12th. June.

Misty drizzling rain all day and no contact with the villagers.

Food foraged from gardens and payment left.

12. Monday 13th. June.

After no sign of movement from the villagers both officers with 4 constables, interpreter and 8 carriers left the camp at 1030 hrs. and made a trip to hamlets on the southern ridges of the valley.

There was some shouting from Petum men who soon appear-ed on the ridges; "We are not your enemies, Go and leave us in peace." "The Penarop are our enemies and we will fight them;" "We would listen and obey but for the Penarop!" As the party neared one hamlet there were a few shouts of "Shoot them! Kill them!" and one very vocal gentleman was heard for some time as he shouted, "I have a reputation as a warrior! Come, join with me and kill them all!"

There were, however, no attempts made by the villagers to attack or molest the party which walked on slowly, always inviting the people to come and discuss matters.

On arrival at the highest hamlet contact was made with two old men and after talking with them for an hour or so 8 or 10 youths were persuaded to join the party.

The party returned to camp at 1330 hrs. and purchased food from the hamlets.

13. Tuesday 14th. June.

Heavy rain during the morning and no contact made, however at about midday 20 Petum men, including an influential man not preciously contacted and 5 Tsigiriba men came to the camp.

The Tsigiriba men reported that they had heard the patrol was coming to them to arrest all the men. They were told that arrests were made only after breaches of the law.

The Petum then joined in conversation with the writer and appeared reasonable and far more straight forward than previously.

The impression was gained that the Petum were ready to abide by the patrol's requests and their statements that

men and leaders would attend the camp in the morning, rang true.

14. Wednesday 15th. June.

Some 120 Petum men gathered at the camp including three of the four leaders. They seemed sincere in their stated willingness to settle matters and camp was broken at 0930 hrs.

Departed at 1020 hrs. with 85 Petum men and after a muddy treck in drizzling rain over flooded streams, tracks and riverlets, the patrol arrived at Pumburel Long Houses at 1230 hrs. where camp was set up after the Tsigiriba leaders told us that the Penarop were willing to meet the patrol and Petum people, here on neutral ground.

Word was sent to the Penarop telling them to come into the patrol and guards were set and instructed to keep a very careful watch against attack on or by the Petum.

Sufficient food purchased for the patrol and 85 Petum men from the arrogant Tsigiriba people.

15. Thursday 16th. June.

Extremely heavy rain overnight ceasing at 0900 hrs. It is estimated that there has been nearly 5 inches of rain in the last 24 hrs.

At 1020 hrs. a line of about 120 men was seen approach -ing but only 50 or so entered the camp. They announced themselves as the Penarop.

All villagers were instructed to remain seated during discussions and to lay aside weapons of any kind.

The three Petum leaders were brought forward to sit near the officers who were seated between the groups and the Penarop instructed to have three or more leaders come forward. They replied, "They are here with us!" "Everyone is here!" However, after 40 minutes talking there were still no Penarop leaders indicated.

The Petum leaders claimed that 3 Penarop leaders, involved in the fighting were not present, but pointed out one middle aged man of outstanding bearing as a leader.

This the Penarop denied vehemently saying, "All are here, settle the matter and go!"

As about 50% of the group previously seen was known to be hidden in a hollow near the camp and as there were dissent -ing murmurs from the Tsigiriba, friends of the Penarop and enemies of the Petum, "All are here!" could not be believed.

After some time the Penarop admitted the middle-aged man as a leader and he came forward.

He had a most insolent manner and refused to co-operate in any way. When told that unless the Penarop leaders came forward at Penarop during the day to discuss and settle the matter, the patrol would go to Penarop and there remain until settle-ment was made, he changed his tune and went off with a group of men.

During this time the Petum had, in every way, obeyed instructions, however when food purchasing was commenced the Tsigiriba developed a most demanding and pushing attitude, making excessive demands for trade and many insults and threats were made to the NCO and interpreter before the writer suspended buying. The Tsigiriba appeared to be asserting themselves in the presence of the other two groups and things began to look ugly as the Tsigiriba milled around the patrol.

Patrol members alerted and after sometime all villagers reseated under the eyes of both officers. A short lecture was given, severely reprimanding those involved.

At this juncture a Cessna aircraft appeared and circled the area several times, dropping a note. It was signalled that all was well, before it departed shortly before heavy rain commenced.

The appearance of this aircraft certainly impressed the people and once the rain ceased and all gathered again, they were far more amendable.

It was decided that a demonstration of the patrol's fire-power should be given and nine fighting shields were placed in line before a large casuarina. The leading fighting men from all groups were invited to pierce as many as possible with bow and arrows. After a display of bowmanship indicating quite good accuracy and power, both officers fired .303 rifles. The balls pierced all nine cedar wood shields and turning balls caused severe damage to some of the end shields and the tree butt.

A talk was then given, emphasising the peaceful intentions of the Government and the patrol but indicating strongly that if so forced, patrols could and would defend themselves. The people were told that the Government's first wish was that man, woman or child should not fear for life or be in danger of attack from others and that no group could kill with impunity.

After the talk the people were given time to examine the shields, digest the talk and discuss their views group to group, before the Penarop/Petum discussions were resumed.

Three Penarop leaders came forward to join the officers and Petum leaders and after several hours talk, compensation "Moga" payments were arranged for 6 deaths still outstanding between the groups.

Further food was then purchased with no trouble of any kind.

16. Friday 17th. June.

Heavy rain, driven by southerly winds, continued all day.

One carrier developed a temperature of 104 degrees and it is suspected he has pneumonia.

Carried rations issued.

17. Saturday 18th. June.

Departed Pumburel 0850 hrs. in misty rain and after a slow hard walk up flooded tracks, detouring where streams which normally went under ground had swollen and flooded valleys, and through deep mud the patrol entered the WE Valley at about 1130 hrs. as hard driving rain commenced.

Arrived [illegible] Ceremonial ground at 1340 hrs. where the Tombil people assisted with the erection of the camp.

The reception given the patrol was good and the people appear to be sincerely abiding by their expressed intention of co-operation (vide P.R. No. 4 1959/60).

Ample sweet potato of extremely good quality purchased and issued.

18. Sunday 19th. June.

Remained in camp during a day of heavy rain.

Talks with the villagers during short breaks in the rain.

Ample food purchased.

19. Monday 20th. June.

Departed camp 0600hrs. in misty rain and arrived Nina at 0900 hrs. after a wet muddy walk.

Patrol stood down.

E N D O F D I A R Y

INTRODUCTION:

This patrol was carried out under instructions from the ADO Mendi who had received reports of inter-village fighting in the Emia Valley resulting in a number of deaths.

It was instructed that this, the Nipa Patrol, should rendevous with a Mendi Patrol, led by the ADO, at or near Tiberam in the Emia Valley, however, the Mendi Patrol was forced to return to Mendi as the ADO was urgently required at Tari for a sitting of the Supreme Court.

As it was planned to meet with the Mendi patrol and operate as one unit, and also to ensure a compact and fast moving party, only seven members of the R.P. & N.G.C. were included in the Nipa patrol. With the non-arrival of the Mendi party, the Nipa patrol was left a little under strength for the task undertaken in the area in which it was operating, but by moving slowly and carefully it was enabled to accomplish something in having the opposing groups come together and make arrangements for "moga" compensation payments.

The firearms demonstration, given at various times as reported in the diary, were considered essential in order that the people would not be foolishly led to attack or molest the relatively light patrol with possible serious results both to them and in the case of an attack pressed home to the patrol.

The patrol did not remain to police payment of the "moga" primarily to give the people a chance of willing and unpoliced co-operation with the patrol's instructions and, secondarily, so that in case of refusal to comply, the patrol would not be forced to attempt action beyond its limitations.

A much stronger patrol will visit the area within the next three months when completion of "moga" payments will be checked.

The patrol successfully investigated and halted the chain of pay-back killings between the groups involved.

NATIVE AFFAIRS:

I The people of this area were first contacted by Messrs. Champion and Adamson and have seen but sporodic and fleeting visits by patrols since then until this year.

They have a natural tendency to consider that all patrols should move quickly through their area and resent any intervention in their traditional way of life.

This, the second patrol to move slowly in the area, and the first to intervene in fighting, was not well met and it can be expected that later patrols, doing a similar job, will also meet with resentment and some hostility. With good handling, and some luck, hostility should not develope into pressing attack as the people have been shewn the firepower of patrols and should have now some respect for that power.

The patrol was greeted as an unwarranted and unwanted intruder and the people showed openly their hostility to, and refusal to comply with, the edict of law and order promulgated by the previous patrol (Mr. J. J. Jordan, NIPA P.R. No.2 - 1959/60).

Only after the patrol had remained at camp within the one group, Petum, for nearly two weeks was there any move to comply with its request and then, almost certainly, only because the people wished to be rid of the patrol,

Once the people of the Petum group made the move to comply with requests they behaved well and, on entering hostile territory with the patrol, caused no trouble at all.

The Tsigiriba, apparently not involved in the hostility between the Petum and Penarop groups, while they showed no open hostility to the patrol, treated it with disdain and may be expected to give trouble to any patrol which is required to settle troubles in which they are involved.

Thus it may be said that the native situation in the Emia Valley is not good and further, that as patrols extend closer contact to this area there may well be unpleasant incidents, the people generally being arrogant and resentful of intervention.

The only other village visited by the patrol, Enjum, Tembil Group, in the We Creek shows a pleasing improvement as this patrol was welcomed and the people co-operated well. All persons who visited the camp showed far less timidity than on previous visits and approach by the leaders was less tentative.

NATIVE AFFAIRS:

II Investigation of Reported Fighting

The inter-village fighting, prime purpose of this patrol, was investigated and discussed with men of the Petum and Penarop Groups and the writer adjudicated when the three representatives of each group discussed compensation payments for the deaths involved.

From the statements made by the groups the facts of the matter appeared to be:-

Shortly after Nipa Patrol No. 2 of 1959/60 had passed through the area, a Penarop man of wealth was visiting his brother-in-law at Uturop, part of the Petum fighting alliance.

The Uturop man had caught a large bush rat that afternoon and shortly after reaching his house, where he met his Penarop brother-in-law, he shouted abuse at a pig which was in the house and which sniffed at the rat. It would appear the abuse was shouted at and about the pig being in the men's section of the house, however, the Penarop man took it as directed at himself and became indignant, tearing out his beard and refusing to be pacified even when offered the bush rat carcase as a gift.

The Penarop man took himself off to Penarop where he arrived with beard fully plucked out and very upset. He reported the insult, worked up his group to the state where they decided to kill the Uturop man and sent threats to Uturop to the effect that they would do so,

Realising Uturop's weakness against the powerful Penarop group, the Uturop man went to the Petum for support which he was readily promised and the Petum and friends gathered at Uturop.

The Penarop made a sortie against the alliance of friends and killed one Uturop and three Wogia (Petum alliance). They cut off the heads and forearms of the one Uturop and two of the Wogia dead as an added insult.

The Penarop then made a "moga" payment for the Uturop deceased of 24 Mother of Pearl shell, but made no payments for the Wogia.

Shortly after the "moga" was completed the Petum alliance ambushed and killed the most influential Penarop leader and severed his head, forearms and lower legs, split his torso and stuffed it with forest rubbish and took away the head, forearms and lower legs which were distributed to all villages and hamlets in the alliance.

This story was agreed to by all parties.

Both groups agreed that "moga" or death compensation payments, should be made for all deceased and on completion of discussions which involved 1 Penarop and 3 Wogia dead, the Petum introduced 2 Penarop deatns outstanding since early 1959 and offered to make compensation for these at the same time.

The only comment to be made on the story as agreed by all parties is to note the simplicity of the basic reason for these killings. The imagined insult was emphasised, surprisingly, by the Penarop spokesmen who told the story hiding nothing and appeared to believe that their man was mistaken. They, infact, brought out the point that the insults and abuse were directed at a pig and not their man and this gave rise to some humour.

It is difficult to guess if these payments as agreed by all parties will in fact be made and the next patrol to the area will endeavour to police payment if it is not made.

A very small incident could possibly begin hostilities again thus disrupt payment of the mogas.

GENERAL

As the patrol was concerned only with the investigation of the inter-village fighting and thus with contacting the groups concerned, no information on other aspects of patrolling, normally reported, was gathered.

Any comments which could be made under various headings could only be vague and of doubtful accuracy.

D. N. BUTLER.
Officer-in-Charge, NIPA.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Patrol Report NIPA No. 5 of 1959/60

Appendix Report on Native Constabulary

No. 3442 S/Constable WARUS

A very good man, who, as usual, carried out his duties quietly and well. A reliable man when trouble looms, he does not lose his head and thinks of his whole party.

No. 8592 Constable TUNAH

Of average calibre, this member does his job.

No. 9354 Constable TAPE

Oft times a humourist this member carries out his duties satisfactorily and with more age should become a reliable man.

No. 9649 Constable ASARIP

Intelligent but as yet still young he should develope with more experience.

No. 9686 Constable KAMBIAN

A good worker except on those few occassions when his hot temper is aroused.

No. 9970 Constable YAB

A satisfactory worker.

No. 9992 Constable YAGAM

A little slow at times however he does work reasonably and should develope.

D. N. BUTLER.
Officer R.P. & N.G.C.

GS:BT. 67-2-3.

Sub District Office,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

26th July, 1960.

The District Officer,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

NIPA PATROL NO.5-6 1959/60
EMIA CREEK

Please find herewith a Report in triplicate on Nipa Patrol No.5 of 1959/60 to the EMIA Creek conducted by Mr. D.N. Butler Patrol Officer.

Reports at MENDI indicated that five natives had been killed in tribal disturbances in the EMIA Creek area. I decided to mount a patrol to inquire into these disturbances and arranged to rendezvous with Mr. Butler in the EMIA Creek. This was to take place following the TENTE Airstrip purchase Tuesday 31st May and before to the visit of the Supreme Court to the Southern Highlands scheduled for the 6th June. I intended to take a party of eight Native police and another officer into the area to assist Mr. Butler.

Whereas my estimate of the time needed to get to the area concerned and return to MENDI was five days in reality it would have taken seven days in which case I could not have attended the Supreme Court Sitting at Tari.

My failure to reach the rendezvous placed Mr. Butler in an unpleasant position and he did very well to arrange a settlement.

I am not inclined to leave the matter as it stands but intend my next patrol to the UNDIRI scheduled to commence on the 12th September will also patrol the EMIA Creek. Mr. Butler should be able to mount a patrol to that area towards the end of September. We have sufficient staff to make an all out effort to overcome the hostility and ressentment shown to this patrol.

The patrol was more successful than one would have expected and the fortitude and insistence of Mr. Butler and his party will do much to improve the native situation. At least as far as patrols are concerned.

Mr. Butler has conducted another very useful patrol.

(GORDON SMITH)
Assistant District Officer.

c.c. O.I.C. NIPA.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Patrol Report No. 5 of 1959/60 NIPA S.H.D.

Patrol Conducted by: D. N. BUTLER Patrol Officer Gr. 11

Area Patrolled: EMIA CREEK

Patrol Accompanied by: (1) R.A. Head P.O. Gr. 1
(2) R.P. & N.G.C. 1 N.C.O.
6 Constables 32 Carriers
1 Interpreter 1 A.P.O.

Duration: 2/6/60 to 20/6/60
19 days

Did Medical Assistant Accompany? No

Last Patrol to area by: Native Affairs ~~2/6/60~~ 3/60
P.H.D. Nil

Map Reference: Sketch map accompanied

Objects of Patrol: Investigate reported fighting in Emia Creek area.

D. N. BUTLER.
Officer-in-Charge, NIPA.

DIARY

1. Thursday 2nd. June.

Departed NIPA 0700 hrs. and arrived at Ebil Ceremonial Ground at 0845 hrs. where guides were picked up. Continued on and arrived at Mobera Ceremonial Ground at 1015 hrs. where we changed guides before continuing on. The Tsemin (Mobera) guides claimed there was no track straight down the Emia and as, the patrol wished to move quickly and could not spare time to check this statement, followed them across to the We Creek area to Karamala Ceremonial Ground arriving at 1200 hrs.

Drinking water had been short all along the route and the patrol halted for 45 minutes while a water party was sent to the village watering point. Departed again at 1245 hrs. and arrived at Pumburel Long houses at 1420 hrs.

After some discussion with the Pumburel men camp was erected and foods purchased.

These people appear indifferent to the patrol and there is a certain amount of arrogance. When influence is being extended more strongly in this area, they could give trouble.

2. Friday 3rd. June.

Departed Pumburel at 0850 hrs. after heavy fog rose. There was some difficulty in obtaining guides but eventually two youths agreed to show the way to the patrol.

Arrived at KABIT Ceremonial Ground, Petum Group, at 1100 hrs. The people of this group are alleged to be the couse of reports received at Mendi and the patrol remained to wait the pre-arranged arrival of the Mendi patrol led by the ADO.

A circlet of casuarinas and tangets freshly planted in the ceremonial ground are alleged to indicate the killing and dismembering of the chief fight leader of their tradition-al enemy the Penarop group.

People were in evidence on the ridges and peaks around about and 30 or so men entered the camp to sit with the patrol. They expressed a desire to witness firearms in operation, and a short demonstration was given against a nearby limestone cliff and penetration shewn on a fair sized casuarina.

At 1500 hrs. with no sign of the Mendi patrol camp was erected with the aid of the villagers with the patrol. Ample foods were purchased.

Heavy rain commenced at 1700 hrs.

No attempt was made to discuss or investigate the alleged fighting as it was not known what reports or inform -ation had been supplied to the ADO. All investigation will be left until his arrival.

3. Saturday 4th. June.

Both officers remained in camp endeavouring to make contact with men from Petum Group. It is alleged that all visitors to the camp both yesterday and today are from outside groups.

Many armed men again in evidence on peaks and ridges above the camp, however few of the visitors entered camp with weapons.

The atmosphere is not good and it appears that the people are waiting for the patrol to move on or make some move before committing themselves to action of any kind.

Both officers climbed a limestone peak 1200 feet above the camp to make mapping corrections and observations and to try to see signs of the Mendi patrol.

No signs of the Mendi patrol were seen and it appears that there is some delay to or cancellation of the patrol.

Some native foods purchased from people from outside villages and the women who came in were given peanut seed.

During the evening the men on the ridges and peaks, demanded that the patrol move on as they wished to fight with their enemies. They were told the patrol would move on after they had been to see it.

4. Sunday 5th. June.

Heavy rain until 1000 hrs.

The patrol remained in camp.

Large numbers of armed men still to be seen on the ridges and peaks and a considerable number could be seen gathering at houses within sight of the camp.

At 1100 hrs., a native, smeared with white clay, appeared at the camp with a note from Mr. Smith ADO Mendi which informed that his patrol was returning to Mendi to meet Supreme Court commitments. The bearer of the note gave the patrol, and visiting natives, a rather garbled story of wife stealing and a return to this area by Mr. Smith's patrol within six days. He then moved among the local men with whom he appeared to have friendly relationship and when questioned by the writer claimed no knowledge of fighting or killings in this area.

The non arrival of the Mendi patrol left this patrol under strength for action in this area and, with the note-bearer telling the people that the Mendi patrol had moved back to Mendi, it was an uncomfortable position.

Shortly before midday the atmosphere became tense and the patrol carriers became ill at ease. This tense -ness was felt by both officers and though there were no signs of antagonism from the men who could be seen, all police were put on the alert.

No women were visible any where in the valley.

The Petum were invited to enter the camp to discuss the alleged killings and a group of 60 to 80 men and youths came down to the camp. The spokesman, while admitting that they had killed and dismembered an enemy fight leader, refused to have anything to do with adjudication by the patrol and demanded that it depart.

His words, spoken in arrogant and insulting terms, began to stir up the people and as a precautuonary measure he was placed under arrest by the writer. The people were told that such matters were Government business and that, as they had been instructed by Patrol No. 2 of 1959/60, Killings and fighting would be followed by Government intervention.

At one stage the situation had looked extremely ugly, the men cutting the ground with their very long handled axes, and generally behaving in a threatening manner, however they were quietened after the arrest of their leader and a severe lecture given by the writer.

A firearms demonstration by the police detachment was then given, that the people might realise police as well as both officers were effectively armed.

The men stated that other leaders were not at the camp but would appear tomorrow to discuss settlement of the killings.

No foods purchased and carried rations issued.

5. Monday 6th. June.

Heavy rain commenced 0500 hrs. and continued until after midday. A few men from outside villages came to the camp but not one Petum was seen.

At 1500 hrs. a Cessna aircraft circled the camp and was signalled that all was well.

Food was foraged from a nearby garden and payment left in small trade.

Towards evening there was shouting from the ridges that the Petum people would be in tomorrow.

6. Tuesday 7 th. June.

Very heavy rain all night and continuing until after midday. No movement was seen in the surrounding country, and because of the heavy rain all morning and the miserable light drizzle of the afternoon, no attempt was made to induce the people to come to the camp.

Again food foraged from gardens and small trade payment left.

A Petum man made himself known to the Patrol late in the afternoon and after conversation was sent off to tell the people that the patrol would rem in until the Petum people came to the patrol, discussed the alleged killings and arranged settlement of them with their enemies.

7. Wednesday 8 th. June.

After the heavy morning mist cleared at 0900 hrs. men began to move into the camp and by 1030 hrs. there appeared to be a fairly representative group of Petum present.

After discussions these man agreed to accompany the patrol to meet, their enemies and arrange settlement, however it did seem that the more influential men were not present and thus it is possible that the Petum will not abide by this arrangement.

Sufficient foods purchased and issued.

The atmosphere during the day was not good and it seemed that the people were in two minds; whether to try the Government way of settlement, or to make a stand, refuse to accept the patrol's authority and endeavour to force it to move on, however there were no incidents of any kind.

8. Thursday 9 th. June.

A few men gathered at the camp at about 0900 hrs. and informed the patrol that the influential men would not be coming to the patrol, that the Petum did not accept the patrol's authority and that it should move on out of the area.

The camp was secured and at 1030 hrs. after attempt -ing to call the people into the camp, both officers with 4 constables, interpreter and 10 carriers accompanied by a Petum guide left the camp to walk downstream to a Petum hamlet home of an influential man.

As the party moved slowly downstream the interpreter called to the people asking them to meet the party anywhere along the track. Many armed men could be seen, as always, on the peaks and ridges however echo was the only answer.

The party waited for half an hour at the hamlet near Tibaram ceremonial ground, during which time many more armed men joined those already on the ridges and peaks on both sides of the valley. Just as the order to move back to camp was given it was discovered that the guide, a Petum man who made himself known on Tuesday, had run off.

As the party began to move back the interpreter continued calling, telling the Petum to join with, or follow, the party to the camp and stating that the patrol would remain until they did so. The return was being made from hamlet to hamlet heping that the people would be more willing to meet the party on their own ground.

As the party left Tibaram ceremonial ground the first answers came from the people. Shouted threats, which despite advice from the party that any action would be foolish, grew in volume until the limestone cliffs rang with shouts of "Kill them" and "Shoot them."

It also became evident that men from other groups were with the Petum and joining in vocal competion with them.

The party was led away from the main track along the Emia Creek, (through dense growth and narrow defiles), and walked along the northern side of the valley to a hamlet on a ridge above the camp.

While resting here and endeavouring to talk with the people - unsuccessfully, as their shouting drowned the inter-preter's - two arrows were fired by unseen bowmen, one passing over the heads of the party and the ohter striking the ground about two yards to one side. These arrows were launched from some distance off and appeared to be fired at the general position of the party rather than aimed at certain members.

The area around the party was immediately cleared of growth and protection given the carriers. The people were warned that any further attack would be met with rifle fire.

A short time later the writer fired one warning shot into a stone gluff over the heads of a party who ran, shouting threats, into hiding at the base of the ridge below the patrol, and these men retreated, the shouted threats died down and the interpreter was able to make himself heard as he shouted to the people to cease from the threats and attacks and to meet the patrol on a friendly and sensible footing. It was pointed out that, did the patrol so wish, it could kill men as the stone had been broken but that the people had nothing to fear from firearms unless they continued the attack and endangered party members.

After an hours wait 4 youths came near the party and were persuaded to come into the cleared area where the patrol's aims and objectives were explained. The party then made shouted contact with other men, who stated that they would come to the camp tomorrow, before moving slowly back to the camp.

Two pigs seen at the hamlet were shot with .303 rifles and left on the track as evidence of the effective weapons of the patrol and the people told to examine them and realise that while the patrol would not willingly fire upon them, if it was forced to do so to ensure safety of its members the results would be drastic.

The party returned to camp at 1500 hrs. to find all well.

Shortly before dusk several Petum men brought food for sale and stated that the younger and less wealthy men wished to come to settlement but that the more influential men had, to date, refused to do so. They appeared upset about the attack and wished to be reconciled with the patrol.

Native foods supplemented by carried rations.

9. Friday 10 th. June.

Heavy mist and light rain during most of the day, however shouted conversation with the usual armed men on the ridge tops brought their statement that all the peo le would be at the camp tomorrow.

Food foraged from gardens and small trade left in payment.

A miserable day and one cannot blame the people for not coming in.

10. Saturday 11 th. June.

At about 1000 hrs. numbers of shouting men gathered at the houses within sight of the camp, all were armed and an old man was seen carrying a bundle of 10 or 15 bows and two youths carried great bundles of arrows.

By 1100 hrs. 100 armed men and youths could be seen and others could be heard shouting. There appeared to be a division of opinion between those for and against attacking the patrol, and it appeared that those against won the day as a group of 60 or 70 entered the camp and listened to a short talk during which they were told that the group as a whole must follow the Government instructions, cease fighting and make settlement with their enemies.

No leaders were present and no real agreement was reached in discussion with the men present. After an hours futile discussion the men drifted off, following a reputed report that their enemies had destroyed a ceremonial ground. No consternation was shewn and perhaps the report was false.

A small amount of food purchased and supplemented by carried rations.

11. Sunday 12th. June.

Misty drizzling rain all day and no contact with the villagers.

Food foraged from gardens and payment left.

12. Monday 13th. June.

After no sign of movement from the villagers both officers with 4 constables, interpreter and 8 carriers left the camp at 1030 hrs. and made a trip to hamlets on the southern ridges of the valley.

There was some shouting from Petum men who soon appeared on the ridges; "We are not your enemies, Go and leave us in peace." "The Pensrop are our enemies and we will fight them;" "We would listen and obey but for the Pensrop!" As the party neared one hamlet there were a few shouts of "Shoot them! Kill them!" and one very vocal gentleman was heard for some time as he shouted, "I have a reputation as a warrior! Come, join with me and kill them all!"

There were, however, no attempts made by the villagers to attack or molest the party which walked on slowly, always inviting the people to come and discuss matters.

On arrival at the highest hamlet contact was made with two old men and after talking with them for an hour or so 8 or 10 youths were persuaded to join the party.

The party returned to camp at 1330 hrs. and purchased food from the hamlets.

13. Tuesday 14th. June.

Heavy rain during the morning and no contact made, however at about midday 20 Petum men, including an influential man not preciously contacted and 5 Tsigiriba men came to the camp.

The Tsigiriba men repoted that they had heard the patrol was coming to them to arrest all the men. They were told that arrests were made only after breaches of the law.

The Petum then joined in conversation with the writer and appeared reasonable and far more straight forward than previously.

The impression was gained that the Petum were ready to abide by the patrol's requests and their statements that

men and leaders would attend the camp in the morning rang true.

14. Wednesday 15th. June.

Some 120 Petum men gathered at the camp including three of the four leaders. They seemed sincere in their stated willingness to settle matters and camp was broken at 0930 hrs.

Departed at 1020 hrs. with 85 Petum men and after a muddy treck in drizzling rain over flooded streams, tracks and riverlets, the patrol arrived at Pumburel Long Houses at 1230 hrs. where camp was set up after the Tsigiriba leaders told us that the Penarop were willing to meet the patrol and Petum people here on neutral ground.

Word was sent to the Penarop telling them to come into the patrol and guards were set and instructed to keep a very careful watch against attack on or by the Petum.

Sufficient food purchased for the patrol and 85 Petum men from the arrogant Tsigiriba people.

15. Thursday 16th. June.

Extremely heavy rain overnight ceasing at 0900 hrs. It is estimated that there has been nearly 5 inches of rain in the last 24 hrs.

At 1020 hrs. a line of about 120 men was seen approach-ing but only 50 or so entered the camp. They announced themselves as the Penarop.

All villagers were instructed to remain seated during discussions and to lay aside weapons of any kind.

The three Petum leaders were brought forward to sit near the officers who were seated between the groups and the Penarop instructed to have three or more leaders come forward. They replied, "They are here with us!" "Everyone is here!" However, after 40 minutes talking there were still no Penarop leaders indicated.

The Petum leaders claimed that 3 Penarop leaders, involved in the fighting were not present, but pointed out one middle aged man of outstanding bearing as a leader.

This the Penarop denied vehemently saying, "All are here, settle the matter and go!"

As about 50% of the group previously seen was known to be hidden in a hollow near the camp and as there were dissent-ing murmurs from the Tsigiriba, friends of the Penarop and enemies of the Petum, "All are here!" could not be believed.

After some time the Penarop admitted the middle-aged man as a leader and he came forward.

He had a most insolent manner and refused to co-operate in any way. When told that unless the Penarop leaders came forward at Penarop during the day to discuss and settle the matter, the patrol would go to Penarop and there remain until settle-ment was made, he changed his tune and went off with a group of men.

During this time the Petum had, in every way, obeyed instructions, however when food purchasing was commenced the Tsigiriba developed a most demanding and pushing attitude, making excessive demands for trade and many insults and threats were made to the NCO and interpreter before the writer suspended buying. The Tsigiriba appeared to be asserting themselves in the presence of the other two groups and things began to look ugly as the Tsigiriba milled around the patrol.

Patrol members alerted and after sometime all villagers reseated under the eyes of both officers. A short lecture was given, severely reprimanding those involved.

At this juncture a Cessna aircraft appeared and circled the area several times, dropping a note. It was signalled that all was well, before it departed shortly before heavy rain commenced.

The appearance of this aircraft certainly impressed the people and once the rain ceased and all gathered again, they were far more amendable.

It was decided that a demonstration of the patrol's fire-power should be given and nine fighting shields were placed in line before a farege casuarina. The leading fighting men from all groups were invited to pierce as many as possible with bow and arrows. After a display of bowmanship indicating quite good accuracy and power, both officers fired .303 rifles. The balls pierced all nine cedar wood shields and turning balls caused severe damage to some of the end shields and the tree butt.

A talk was then given, emphasising the peaceful intentions of the Government and the patrol but indicating strongly that if so forced, patrols could and would defend themselves. The people were told that the Government's first wish was that man, woman or child should not fear for life or be in danger of attack from others and that no group could kill with impunity.

After the talk the people were given time to examine the shields, digest the talk and discuss their views group to group, before the Penarop/Petum discussions were resumed.

Three Penarop leaders came forward to join the officers and Petum leaders and after several hours talk, compensation "Moga" payments were arranged for 6 deaths still outstanding between the groups.

Further food was then purchased with no trouble of any kind.

16. Friday 17th. June.

Heavy rain, driven by southerly winds, continued all day.

One carrier developed a temperature of 104 degrees and it is suspected he has pneumonia.

Carried rations issued.

17. Saturday 18th. June.

Departed Pumburel 0850 hrs. in misty rain and after a slow hard walk up flooded tracks, detouring where streams which normally went under ground had swollen and flooded valleys, and through deep mud the patrol entered the WE Valley at about 1130 hrs. as hard driving rain commenced.

Arrived ANJUM Ceremonial ground at 1340 hrs. where the Tembil people assisted with the erection of the camp.

The reception given the patrol was good and the people appear to be sincerely abiding by their expressed intention of co-operation (vide P.R. No. 4 1959/60).

Ample sweet potato of extremely good quality purchased and issued.

18. Sunday 19th. June.

Remained in camp during a day of heavy rain.

Talks with the villagers during short breaks in the rain.

Ample food purchased.

19. Monday 20th. June.

Departed camp 0600hrs. in misty rain and arrived Nipa at 0900 hrs. after a wet muddy walk.

Patrol stood down.

END OF DIARY

Patrol Report No. 5 of 1959/60

INTRODUCTION:

This patrol was carried out under instructions from the ADO Mendi who had received reports of inter-village fighting in the Emia Valley resulting in a number of deaths.

It was instructed that this, the Nipa Patrol, should rendevous with a Mendi Patrol, led by the ADO, at or near Tiberam in the Emia Valley, however, the Mendi Patrol was forced to return to Mendi as the ADO was urgently required at Tari for a sitting of the Supreme Court.

As it was planned to meet with the Mendi patrol and operate as one unit, and also to ensure a compact and fast moving party, only seven members of the R.P. & N.G.C. were included in the Nipa patrol. With the non-arrival of the Mendi party, the Nipa patrol was left a little under strength for the task undertaken in the area in which it was operating, but by moving slowly and carefully it was enabled to accomplish something in having the opposing groups come together and make arrangements for "moga" compensation payments.

The firearms demonstration, given at various times as reported in the diary, were considered essential in order that the people would not be foolishly led to attack or molest the relatively light patrol with possible serious results both to them and in the case of an attack pressed home to the patrol.

The patrol did not remain to police payment of the "moga" primarily to give the people a chance of willing and unpoliced co-operation with the patrol's instructions and, secondarily, so that in case of refusal to comply, the patrol would not be forced to attempt action beyond its limitations.

A much stronger patrol will visit the area within the next three months when completion of "moga" payments will be checked.

The patrol successfully investigated and halted the chain of pay-back killings between the groups involved.

NATIVE AFFAIRS:

I The people of this area were first contacted by Messrs. Champion and Adamson and have seen but sporodic and fleeting visits by patrols since then until this year.

They have a natural tendency to consider that all patrols should move quickly through their area and resent any intervention in their traditional way of life.

This, the second patrol to move slowly in the area, and the first to intervene in fighting, was not well met and it can be expected that later patrols, doing a similar job, will also meet with resentment and some hostility. With good handling, and some luck, hostility should not develope into pressing attack as the people have been shewn the firepower of patrols and should have now some respect for that power.

The patrol was greeted as an unwarranted and unwanted intruder and the people showed openly their hostility to, and refusal to comply with, the edict of law and order promulgated by the previous patrol (Mr. J. J. Jordan, NIPA P.R. No.2 - 1959/60).

Only after the patrol had remained at camp within the one group, Petum, for nearly two weeks was there any move to comply with its request and then, almost certainly, only because the people wished to be rid of the patrol.

Once the people of the Petum group made the move to comply with requests they behaved well and, on entering hostile territory with the patrol, caused no trouble at all.

The Tsigiriba, apparently not involved in the hostility between the Petum and Penarop groups, while they showed no open hostility to the patrol, treated it with disdain and may be expected to give trouble to any patrol which is required to settle troubles in which they are involved.

Thus it may be said that the native situation in the Emia Valley is not good and further, that as patrols extend closer contact to this area there may well be unpleasant incidents, the people generally being arrogant and resentful of intervention.

The only other village visited by the patrol, Enjum, Tembil Group, in the We Creek shows a pleasing improvement as this patrol was welcomed and the people co-operated well. All persons who visited the camp showed far less timidity than on previous visits and approach by the leaders was less tentative.

NATIVE AFFAIRS:

II Investigation of Reported Fighting

The inter-village fighting, prime purpose of this patrol, was investigated and discussed with men of the Petum and Penarop Groups and the writer adjudicated when the three representatives of each group discussed compensation payments for the deaths involved.

From the statements made by the groups the facts of the matter appeared to be:-

Shortly after Nipa Patrol No. 2 of 1959/60 had passed through the area, a Penarop man of wealth was visiting his brother-in-law at Uturop, part of the Petum fighting alliance.

The Uturop man had caught a large bush rat that afternoon and shortly after reaching his house, where he met his Penarop brother-in-law, he shouted abuse at a pig which was in the house and which sniffed at the rat. It would appear the abuse was shouted at and about the pig being in the men's section of the house, however, the Penarop man took it as directed at himself and became indignant, tearing out his beard and refusing to be pacified even when offered the bush rat carcase as a gift.

The Penarop man took himself off to Penarop where he arrived with beard fully plucked out and very upset. He reported the insult, worked up his group to the state where they decided to kill the Uturop man and sent threats to Uturop to the effect that they would do so,

Realising Uturop's weakness against the powerful Penarop group, the Uturop man went to the Petum for support which he was readily promised and the Petum and friends gathered at Uturop.

The Penarop made a sortie against the alliance of friends and killed one Uturop and three Wogia (Petum alliance). They cut off the heads and forearms of the one Uturop and two of the Wogia dead as an added insult.

The Penarop then made a "moga" payment for the Uturop deceased of 24 Mother of Pearl shell, but made no payments for the Wogia.

Shortly after the "moga" was completed the Petum alliance ambushed and killed the most influential Penarop leader and severed his head, forearms and lower legs, split his torso and stuffed it with forest rubbish and took away the head, forearms and lower legs which were distributed to all villages and hamlets in the alliance.

This story was agreed to by all parties.

Both groups agreed that "moga" or death compensation payments, should be made for all deceased and on completion of discussions which involved 1 Penarop and 3 Wogia dead, the Petum introduced 2 Penarop deaths outstanding since early 1959 and offered to make compensation for these at the same time.

Patrol Report No. 5 1959/60

The only comment to be made on the story as agreed by all parties is to note the simplicity of the basic reason for these killings. The imagined insult was emphasised, surprisingly, by the Penarop spokesmen who told the story hiding nothing and appeared to believe that their man was mistaken. They, infact, brought out the point that the insults and abuse were directed at a pig and not their man and this gave rise to some humour.

It is difficult to guess if these payments as agreed by all parties will in fact be made and the next patrol to the area will endeavour to police payment if it is not made.

A very small incident could possibly begin hostilities again thus disrupt payment of the mogas.

GENERAL

As the patrol was concerned only with the investigation of the inter-village fighting and thus with contacting the groups concerned, no information on other aspects of patrolling, normally reported, was gathered.

Any comments which could be made under various headings could only be vague and of doubtful accuracy.

D. N. BUTLER.
Officer-in-Charge, NIPA.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Patrol Report NIPA No. 5 of 1959/60

Appendix Report on Native Constabulary

No. 3442 S/Constable WARUS

A very good man, who, as usual, carried out his duties quietly and well. A reliable man when trouble looms, he does not lose his head and thinks of his whole party.

No. 8592 Constable TUNAH

Of average calibre, this member does his job.

No. 9354 Constable TAPE

Oft times a humourist this member carries out his duties satisfactorily and with more age should become a reliable man.

No. 9649 Constable ASARIP

Intelligent but as yet still young he should develope with more experience.

No. 9686 Constable KAMBIAN

A good worker except on those few occassions when his hot temper is aroused.

No. 9970 Constable YAB

A satisfactory worker.

No. 9992 Constable YAGAM

A little slow at times however he does work reasonably and should develope.

D. N. BUTLER.
Officer R.P. & N.G.C.

DNA

Copy to: Director
Dept. of Native Affairs.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORT

District of.....SOUTHERN.....HIGHLANDS Report No.....N I P A No. 6 - 1959/60

Patrol Conducted by.....R. A. Hoad, ...Patrol Officer.....

Area Patrolled.....N I P A B A S I N.....

Patrol Accompanied by Europeans.....N I L.....

Natives.....4 police, 1 interpreter, 6 carriers -
- other carriers employed as required.

Duration—From.....27/...6.../19.60.to.....7/...8/1960...

Number of Days.....41 days.....

Did Medical Assistant Accompany?.....No.....

Last Patrol to Area by—District Services.....May...../1960...

Medical .... N I L /19.....

Map Reference.....Tracing aerial contour map - 1" rep. 2 miles.....

Objects of Patrol.....Consolidation of influence.....

.....

DIRECTOR OF DISTRICT SERVICES
AND NATIVE AFFAIRS,
PORT MORESBY.

Forwarded, please.

29/ 8 /1960

.....
District Commissioner Nth

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORT

District of SOUTHERN HIGHLANDS Report No N I P A No. 6 - 1959/60

Patrol Conducted by R. A. Hoad, Patrol Officer.

Area Patrolled N I P A B A S I N

Patrol Accompanied by Europeans N I L

Natives 4 police, 1 interpreter, 6 carriers -
- other carriers employed as required.

Duration—From 27/ 6 /1960 to 7/ 8 /1960

Number of Days 41 days

Did Medical Assistant Accompany? No

Last Patrol to Area by—District Services May /1960

Medical .... N I L /19....

Map Reference Tracing aerial contour map - 1" rep. 2 miles.

Objects of Patrol Consolidation of influence

DIRECTOR OF DISTRICT SERVICES
AND NATIVE AFFAIRS,
PORT MORESBY.

Forwarded, please.

29/ 8 /1960

District Commissioner

67-15-59

16th November, 1960.

The District Officer,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

PATROL REPORT NO. 6 OF 1959-60 - NIPA.

My memorandum 67-15-59 of 13th October, 1960, refers.

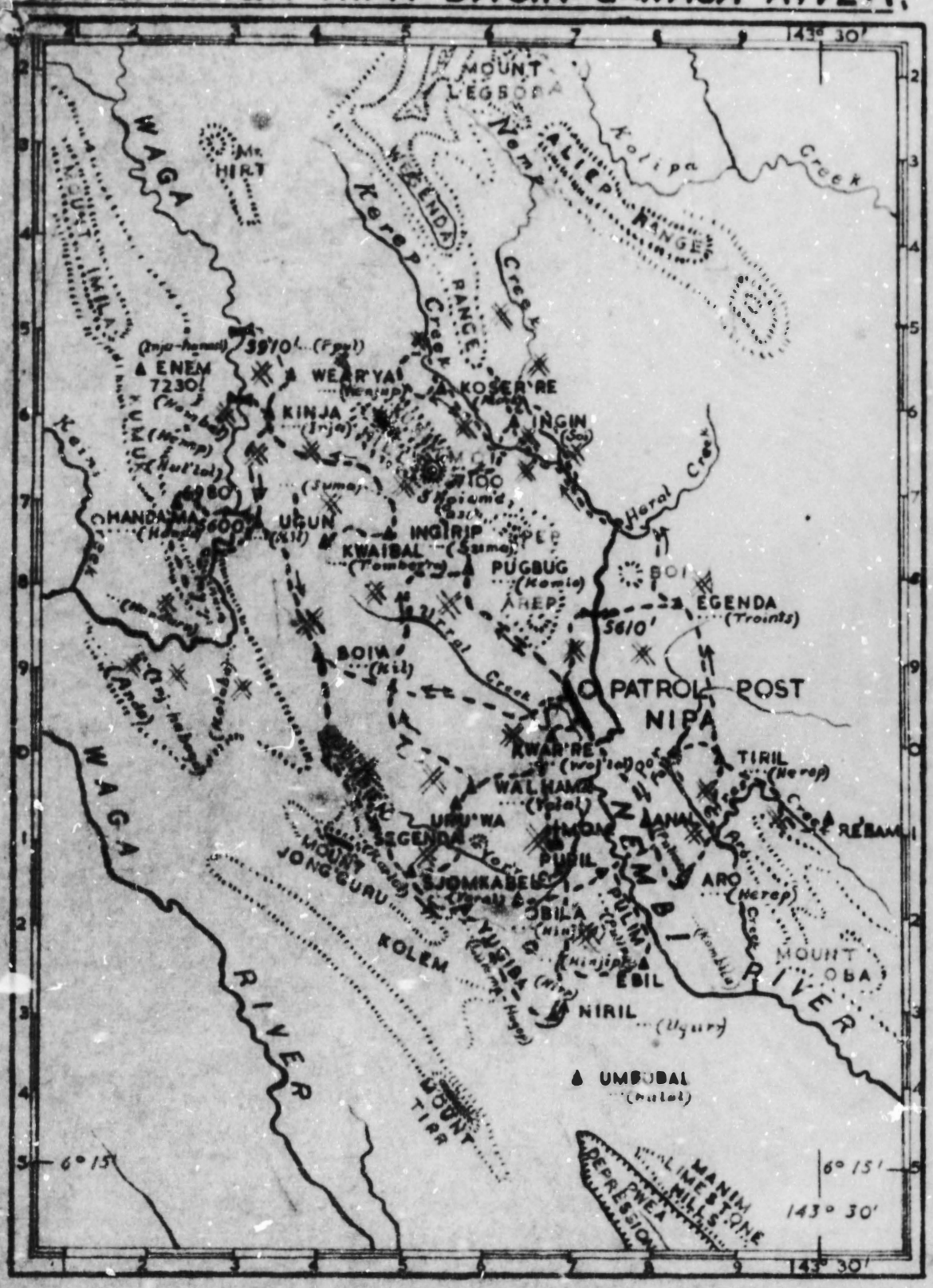
Please find attached seven (7) sun-prints of the patrol sketch map.

(J.K. McCarthy)
Director.

Att.

MAP OF A PATROL INTO THE

NEMBI RIVER–NIPA BASIN–&–WAGA RIVER.



SKETCH MAP TO ACCOMANY

NIPA PATROL REPORT No.6 Of 1959–60

PATROL CONDUCTED BY
R. A. HOAD PATROL OFFICER

LEGEND

HAMLET
GROUP
GARDENS
MOUNTAIN
RIVER
BRIDGE
MARSH
MISSION
PATROL ROUTE

SCALE IN MILES

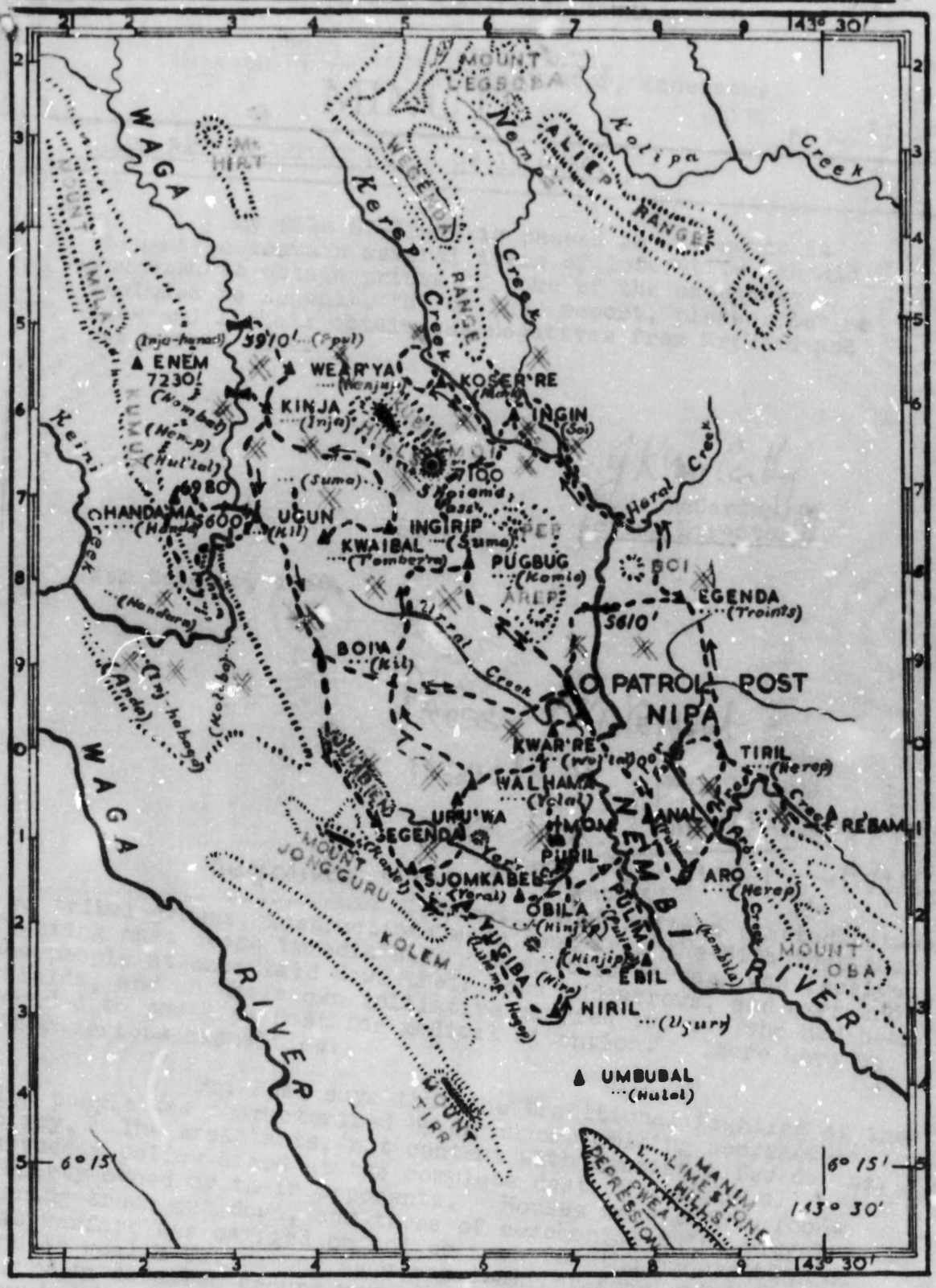
2 1 0 1 2 3 4

ORIGIN: AERIAL MERCATOR PROJECTION
REF. 588 B

Drawn R.A. Hoad
August 1960

MAP OF A PATROL INTO THE

NEMBI RIVER–NIPA BASIN–&–WAGA RIVER.



SKETCH MAP TO ACCOMANY

NIPA PATROL REPORT No. 6 Of 1959–60

PATROL CONDUCTED BY
R. A. HOAD PATROL OFFICER

LEGEND

HAMLET — ▲ EGENDA (Troints)
GROUP
GARDENS
MOUNTAIN
RIVER — WAGA
BRIDGE
MARSH
MISSION
PATROL ROUTE

SCALE IN MILES

2 1 0 1 2 3 4

ORIGIN: AERIAL MERCATOR PROJECTION
REF. 988 B

dr. R.A. Hoad
August 1960

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Department of the Administrator, PRESS RELATIONS OFFICER, Konedobu.

MINUTE

File No. 67-15-59

Govt. Print.—81/7.60.

SUBJECT: NIPA PATROL REPORT NO. 6 OF 1959/60.

My file 67-15-59 is passed to you as it is thought to contain several items of interest. Should you wish to obtain prints of some of the snapshots included in Appendix "B" of the report, pleasen let me know and I shall obtain the negatives from Mr Hoad and get prints made.

J K McCarthy

(J.K. McCarthy)
Acting Director

14th October, 1960.

Press Statement issued as per attached. I have had colour negatives made of the photos. K.U.J. - P.R.O.

TERRITORY of PAPUA and NEW GUINEA

Administration
Press Statement
No. 70.

Port Moresby,
October 27, 1960.

PATROL THROUGH NIPA VALLEY IN THE SOUTHERN HIGHLANDS

(Statement by the Acting Director of Native Affairs, Mr.J.K.McCarthy)

A patrol through primitive country west of Mendi in the Southern Highlands has been very well received by the people of the area, and approximately 80% of the estimated population of 4000 visited the patrol camp sites during the 41-day patrol of the region.

Led by Patrol Officer R.A. Hoad operating out from the Nipa Patrol Post, the government party travelled through the Nipa Valley and north to the Waga River in country between Mendi and Tari. The people of this area have had some contact with government officers following the opening of the Nipa Post about a year ago.

In talks with the Nipa people during the patrol Mr. Hoad outlined the purpose and aims of the Administration, placing particular emphasis on the establishment of law and order in the district, and the need to bring disputes to the government for settlement rather than resorting to armed clashes.

Mr. Hoad reports that the people are beginning to adjust themselves to this new concept of law, and are gradually abandoning the tradition of settling major differences by blood feuds. During the patrol a number of minor disputes were brought to Mr. Hoad for settlement. Recently when a fight started between two tribal groups, instructions were sent from the Nipa Post that fighting must cease immediately. When this message was received the people at once laid down their bows and arrows, and axes and shields, and on their own initiative carried two men who had been wounded to the Nipa Post for medical attention. There were no other serious casualties.

Mr. Hoad says that the traditional fighting of the Nipa people was characterized by an uncompromising scorched-earth policy. The assailants, not content with causing a few deaths, pursued a policy aimed at the complete destructions of all property owned by their opponents. Houses were burnt, food-bearing trees cut down, and trees of ceremonial value ring-barked. This warfare was carried on not so much for the acquisition of land or wealth but rather as a reprisal for some previous incident. Thus when defeated groups were driven off their land it was rarely occupied by the victors, and became waste ground or was left idle for use in future skirmishes.

Since the establishment of the Nipa Post and the cessation of tribal fighting, some of the family groups are beginning to move back to their former land holdings, and it is expected that this trend will continue for several years as more and more people move back to reclaim their original tribal grounds.

The people of the Nipa Valley have ample land both for immediate and future needs, including extension of their present subsistence farming to the production of cash crops. The valley is at an altitude between 5,600 and 5,900 feet with a rainfall of around 120 inches a year. Along the slopes of the Karinj Range some food gardens are being cultivated at altitudes of up to

(over)

7,200 feet. Individual family and extended-family food plots cover up to two acres, and where the terrain permits, gardens are grouped together so that a composite block may be as large as fifteen acres. Composite garden areas are favoured by the people as they offer the best use for communal labour on such tasks as clearing and fencing.

While most garden land is left fallow for several years after cropping, in some parts of the Nipa Valley soil conservation is practised and several crops are raised before land is abandoned to secondary bush growth. Conservation is done by the women making earth-covered mounds of grass and other humus-forming material immediately a crop has been harvested. This is the same system practised by the Tari-Duna people to the west.

The staple crop of the Nipa people is sweet potato supplemented by bananas, sugarcane, taro, wild cabbage and native beans. All the population appeared to have ample food supplies.

RWB.PG

67-15-59

13th October, 1960.

The Mission Liaison Officer,
Department of Education,
KONEDOBU.

Patrol Report No. 6 of 1959/60 - NIPA.

The following extract from the above report is forwarded for your information, please:

"Only one Mission is constantly working in the NIPA area. This is the Methodist Overseas Mission. Their activities are concentrated around PURIL, about one and a half miles South of this station. (An application for a Special Lease for some 45 acres at PURIL is presently under consideration).

A representative from the Capuchin Mission, Mendi, makes sporadic visits to Nipa. Their problem at the moment seems to be lack of staff: they have no priest available to be stationed here permanently. They do, however, have plans for development when the staff becomes available. On Monday, 11th July, the Rev. Father Senan Glass was escorted over certain areas which might be found favourable for a station site. The Mission has not as yet made an application to lease land.

Both missions operate under Restricted Area Permits which limit their activities to within one and a half miles' radius of this station.

In anticipation that the lease at PURIL will be granted the Methodist Mission has gone ahead and cleared five acres. Two native material houses have been erected (each valued at £20) and a third is under construction. In this work the Rev. Keightley is receiving good support from the local people, and these activities are adding to the consolidation of this area.

The Mission provides a medical clinic and their figures show that between 400 to 500 natives receive attention each month. They have plans to build a hospital at PURIL and when staff supervision (European) for this is found the Mission will specialize in material and infant welfare. As we have but the barest facilities of an aid-post here wer are grateful for the Mission's interest in this field.

The Mission (along with the Government) does not provide educational opportunities to the people of NIPA.".

(J.K. McCarthy)
Acting Director.

RWB.FG

67-15-19

13th October, 1960.

The District Officer,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

PATROL REPORT NO. 6 OF 1959-60 - HIPA

Receipt of the above report is acknowledged with thanks.

Mr Head had carried out a painstaking and extremely well-conducted patrol and is to be commended on the presentation of his report, which although detailed is full of interest.

Patrols such as this are the best method of consolidating good relations between the people and the Administration in areas of comparatively recent contact.

I shall have prints made of the patrol sketch map and forward them when they come to hand. Please note that coloured inks do not reproduce on the sun prints very effectively and it may be necessary for you to fill in some of the detail from your own copy of the sketch map.

(J.K. McCarthy)
Acting Director.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA. 67/15/59.1

File No. 30/1-297

DEPARTMENT OF NATIVE AFFAIRS RECEIVED 1 SEP 1960

District Office,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

26th August, 1960

Assistant District Officer,
MENDI.

NIPA PATROL No. 6 of 1959/60.

Thank you for Mr. Hoad's report on his patrol in the NIPA BASIN and your covering comments thereto. The report is particularly well presented and Mr. Hoad is to be commended on an excellent effort. It is apparent also from the detail in the report that Mr. Hoad has done a very thorough job and has a sound approach towards establishing good relations with the people visited.

Copies of correspondence re relevent matters arising from the Report are attached for your information.

It is a great pity that there is not Medical Staff available to further the medical aspect of Administration work in the NIPA area. With the present staff shortage I feel that great though the need may be at NIPA it is less urgent than elsewhere in the District. However I will endeavour to arrange for a Medical Assistant to accompany a NIPA patrol as soon as possible. The death of the native after absconding from hospital was unfortunate and unforeseen as the people concerned came voluntarily and showed no undue concern on admission. Should any further serious cases be admitted from NIPA in the near future would you ensure that arrangements are made with Public Health Department to have someone with the patient to encourage them to stay.

Though potential airstrip sites should be investigated and recorded for future reference there is no point in developing a multiplicity of airstrips and with improvements contemplated and possible on the present NIPA strip it would seem that this strip would be adequate for NIPA requirements.

With the time obviously spent on preparing this report I am particularly pleased that the report has been submitted within a reasonable time. Claim for camping allowance is returned herewith for payment.

(K.W.Dyer.)
District Officer.

c.c.

The Director,
Department of Native Affairs,
KONEDOBU.

Copy for your information please.

Patrol report in duplicate is attached. Though detailed I consider the report a very fine effort from a junior officer and displays considerable application to the task.

The accompanying map is very good and I would appreciate five (5) copies if possible please.

(K.W.Dyer.)
District Officer.

30/1
29/8/60

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA.

File No. 30/1-297

District Office,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

26th August, 1960

Assistant District Officer,
MENDI.

NIPA PATROL No. 6 of 1959/60.

Thank you for Mr. Hoad's report on his patrol in the NIPA BASIN and your covering comments thereto. The report is particularly well presented and Mr. Hoad is to be commended on an excellent effort. It is apparent also from the detail in the report that Mr.Hodd has done a very thorough job and has a sound approach towards establishing good relations with the people visited.

Copies of correspondence re relevent matters arising from the Report are attached for your information.

It is a great pity that there is not Medical Staff available to further the medical aspect of Administration work in the NIPA area. With the present staff shortage I feel that great though the need may be at NIPA it is less urgent than elsewhere in the District. However I will endeavour to arrange for a Medical Assistant to accompany a NIPA patrol as soon as possible. The death of the native after absconding from hospital was unfortunate and unforeseen as the people concerned came voluntarily and showed no undue concern on admission. Should any further serious cases be admitted from NIPA in the near future would you ensure that arrangements are made with Public Health Department to have someone with the patient to encourage them to stay.

Though potential airstrip sites should be investigated and recorded for future reference there is no point in developing a multiplicity of airstrips and with improvements contemplated and possible on the present NIPA strip it would seem that this strip would be adequate for NIPA requirements.

With the time obviously spent on preparing this report I am particularly pleased that the report has been submitted within a reasonable time. Claim for camping allowance is returned herewith for payment.

(K.W.Dyer.)
District Officer.

c.c.

The Director,
Department of Native Affairs,
KONEDOBU.

Copy for your information please.

Patrol report in duplicate is attached. Though detailed I consider the report a very fine effort from a junior officer and displays considerable application to the task.

The accompanying map is very good and I would appreciate five (5) copies if possible please.

(K.W.Dyer.)
District Officer.

67-2-3-.

Sub-District Office,
MENDI.
Southern Highlands District.

The District Officer,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

REPORT ON NIPA PATROL NO. 6 - 1959/60.

Please find herewith the original and two copies of a report on a patrol to the NIPA Basin conducted by Mr. R.A. Hoad, Patrol Officer. A Camping Allowance claim and a copy of the comments of the Officer in Charge NIPA are also attached.

The Officer in Charge NIPA has been requested to investigate the potential air-strip site with a view to development to Category A standards. The existing air-strip is suitable for development to Category B standard.

There are many areas in the Southern Highlands where emissions of natural gas have been reported. To my knowledge none of these have been investigated. It may be that there are oil deposits in the Southern Highlands. If you consider the time opportune can the Director of Lands be approached with a view to sending a geologist to investigate please.

The number of names recorded is satisfactory and we are well on the way to proving the estimated population of 10,000 for the Nipa Administrative area.

Mr. Hoad has noted many items of interest. That recorded on page 34 of the report may be of use to the Producer of the Native Peoples Session. The story recorded follows to a degree the Garden of Eden and may be the result of slight mission contact.

The presentation of the report is good, and Mr. Hoad is to be complemented on his application.

(GORDON SMITH.)
Assistant District Officer.

cc OIC. NIPA.

67-1-5

Patrol Post, NIPA,
Mendi Sub District,
Southern Highlands Distric
18th. August, 1960.

The Assistant District Officer,
Mendi Sub District,
MENDI

Patrol Report NIPA No. 6 of 1959/60.
Mr. R.A. Hoad, P.O.I.

Please find attached four copies of the above Report, appendices and comments on Police and one copy of the Patrol map drawn by Mr. Hoad.

The Patrol covered a large portion of the Nipa Basi - that is the area in the immediate vicinity of Nipa itself - and, as instructed, Mr. Hoad moved through the area slowly, carrying out where he considered possible, a preliminary census.

While such preliminary census at this early stage cannot be hoped to be accurate, its value in establishing contact, opportunity for group discussion and a minimum population figure is immeasurable.

The following points were drawn to Mr. Hoad's attention and are included for your information:-

(1) Page 28. AGRICULTURE - Pear.

This could be more accurately rendered as PEA, a timber tree, the fruiting nut of which is valued as a supplementary food. I believe it is a variety of Artic Beech.

Page 31. FORESTRY - PYE.

This is better rendered as PAI, the Huri word for PEA.

(2) The phonetic spelling of native words and names could be simplified and I have suggested to Mr. Hoad that he use the system of phonetics from Murphy's Pidgin Handbook. No copies of the Nataff memos concerning phonetics are held at NIPA but the Handbook above follows that system closely.

VILLAGE OFFICIALS

I agree entirely with Mr. Hoads comments under this heading. Some Village Constables will be recommended for appointment by the next patrol through the area when younger, mature men of influence are better known.

FORESTRY

The stand of hardwood near KWAIBAL will be of great value to this area in the future. The timber is suitable for bridge-works, building frames and flooring and many trees are of good size, three feet in diameter with stems that soar some 60 to 80 feet to the first branch.

ANTHROPOLOGY

Comments concerning "Limestone Caves" and the "Kebil Ceremonies" are of interest and help to give some idea of the beliefs of the people. Contact as ensues when gathering information of the type reported, is at the people's own level of interest and can help establish better relationships.

CENSUS

From the figures submitted in Appendix "C", both the numbers of names recorded and estimated numbers for the villages in Groups A, B and D., the probable population of the area patrolled is 6,000 people.

This area is approximately 10 miles by 8 miles in extent and Nipa Station is situated centrally in the area.

I agree with Mr. Hoad that the figure of 6,000 is a conservative figure but would prefer a higher figure to be proven by recorded names rather than estimate. No estimate of absentees from the censused villages is included.

Mr. Hoad has carried out thoroughly a valuable patrol. The Report is well presented and shows a close interest to the job in hand.

D. N. Butler
Officer-in-Charge.

Minute: Mr. Hoad has since submitted two copies of a map showing his Patrol route and village centres.

C.C. Mr. Hoad
Patrol Officer Gr. I
N I P A

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

In Reply
Please Quote

No. P.R. -NIPA No. 6

Patrol Post,
N I P A,
Southern Highlands.

16th. August, 1960

The District Officer,
Southern Highlands District,
M E N D I.

PATROL REPORT N I P A No. 6 - 1959/60

Report of a patrol sent into the NIPA Basin area to consolidate the influence of the Administration.

Officer conducting patrol	:	R. A. Hoad, Patrol Officer
Area visited	:	The Nipa Basin and North to the Waga River.
Duration of patrol	:	Monday, 27th. June - to - Sunday, 7th. August, 1960. 41 days
Native personnel accompanying	:	(1) R. P. & N. G. C. : 4 (2) Interpreter, TIMBA/PUTAP (3) Carriers, average of 6 Other 'village to village' carriers employed as required.
Object of patrol	:	To consolidate the influence of the Administration.
Previous visits	:	Patrol Report NIPA No. 4 of 1959/60 refers.
Map reference	:	A rough sketch map of the area patrolled is attached.

The scale approximates to 1/125,000. Rivers and topographical features etc. were traced from 988 B 111 - a contour map loaned to this office by the District Officer, Mendi.

The patrol route and hamlets (latter designated by principal ceremonial grounds) have been added. A few minor alterations were made to stream courses, mainly on the Eastern side of the Basin.

INTRODUCTION :

This patrol set out to make good contact with the people living in the NIPA Basin and environs. Most of these people were brought under the influence of the Administration whilst the Patrol Post, NIPA, was being established. A concept of law and order was introduced and now many of these people have, it seems, departed from the tradition of settling major differences by blood feuds. Since the establishment of the patrol post it has been our policy to concentrate on this area and to further understanding between the people and the Government.

As a result of frequent visits to near by hamlets by Government officers this patrol was generally well received. Even in areas where patrol contact had been less felt - in particular in the twin tributaries of the Nombi, the NEMP and KREMP - people mostly extended pleasing hospitality. On the fringes of the WAGA River it might be said that some people at first appeared apprehensive of our presence. However, good contact was made with them before the patrol moved on.

Consolidation of influence was effected through discussions and, where possible, through census. It is emphasised that an initial census of this area was not an objective of this patrol. However, it is suggested that where such is possible a census provides a good means of extending contact to all and consolidating. It also offers group participation in discussions to the best advantage.

For one day the patrol was accompanied by the Rev. Senan Glass of the Capuchin Mission, Mendi. He was interested on behalf of this mission to inspect certain localities which might provide a suitable station site for future activities.

The patrol was held up on two occasions by ceremonies to 'KEBIL'. I thought it better to delay movement of the patrol until festivities were concluded and the people returned to their hamlets. Conversely the festivities enabled the writer to make closer contact with the people and observe certain of their practices. These observations and certain important aspects of the ceremonies have been recorded under 'ANTHROPOLOGICAL'.

A photographic supplement is attached as A P P E N D I X E. This illustrates the nature of territory patrolled, the type of people, and some aspects of their material culture.

.....

PATROL DIARY :

Monday, 27th. June : Patrol departed NIPA Patrol Post at 15.30 hrs. After crossing the NEMBI River, only five minuites walk from the station, we travelled in a Southerly direction skirting the PIBIAL knoll which lies to the East of our route. Passed through the ceremonial grounds of NEMBANDA at 15.40, ANALD at 15.00, and WEIP at 16.13. These hamlets belong to the PULIMAL group. From WIEP the patrol climbed a limestone ridge to ARO. It was observed that this ceremonial ground is laid out with stones and beds for festivities which commence to-morrow.

The patrol proceeded a little further on and camp was made. Altitude 5880 feet.

Some good sized sweet-potato was purchased from local villagers. Also a little taro and edible pit-pit.

Tuesday 28th. June : Patrol remained at ARO to observe the first ceremony to 'Kebil'. From early morning family units moved into the ceremonial ground area and prepared for the festivity. Men smeared with oil and pitch, faces painted and plumes of the 'King-of-Saxony' arranged in wigs; young women liberaly bathed with the Tigaso oil and their faces painted - this was the order of dress for the day.

Around 09.00 with the interpreter and guides I went down to a small ceremonial ground, MUNDU, where (apparently) the crux of the whole ceremony was performed. Some 50 men held a rope vine and shuttled back and forwards as a train. Two other men danced around them. One held a rattle and the other beat upon a drum. At about 09.45 the ceremony reached a climax when the leader shouted certain chants and the train joined in as part of a chorus. This was repeated three times. Immediately after the men dropped the rope and all retired to the principal ceremonial ground for traditional dancing.

Little activity centered around our camp today.

Wednesday, 29th. June : Today the scene of festivities has shifted from ARO to WEBANDA, a hamlet about two miles to the North of here. From early morning this place appeared very deserted as most families left at dawn to go to the new ceremony.

At 09.00 hrs. with the interpreter, two police and guide, I myself set out to visit the ceremony. We took a devious route, however, and visited some new gardens on the way. We crossed the ARO creek (or AR) at its junction with the HRES creek (the latter flows from the East) and climbed immediately above this a grassed limestone ridge, HINT. Walked along the ridge a short distance and climbed again. Arrived at the ceremony at WEBANDA at 12.15. Observed the ceremony and had a short discussion with the principal headman. Returned to camp (ARO) at 13.40.

Some native foods were purchased shortly before dusk.

Thursday, 30th. June : From 08.00 hrs. on people began to assemble at the camp. By 09.00 it appeared that a good percentage had come and thereupon discussions were held. Emphasis was placed first upon the more important provisions of the Native Regulation Ordinance and Regulations and upon the protection and well-being which may now be extended to all under the auspices of the Government. Following this a broad outline of the agencies of the Administration was given and again in particular Native Affairs work was explained. On conclusion it was decided to take a census as a surety to consolidation - the people themselves showed willingness to co-operate. The census was compiled without incident.

During the course of discussions a commotion was heard from a nearby house. Two men were promptly arrested to prevent any disturbance which it was thought might upset the gathering. Later I questioned the two concerned and it emerged that one of them had a long outstanding complaint against the other. He said that he wished to bring the matter up to me for consideration, but the other had resisted this. I then heard the complaint. It was of a trivial nature and was settled satisfactorily out-of-court.

At the conclusion of discussions at 14.00 the camp was broken. At 14.15 with the support of local natives as carriers the patrol moved to TIRIL. Descended through a small ceremonial ground, KÜNT, crossed the ARO creek at 15.20 and then climbed.

Heavy rain now falling. Passed through WEBENDA at 15.33 and continued on to TIRIL. Camp made at 15.40. Altitude 6610 feet. Patrol carriers paid off.

I noticed that the ceremonial grounds of WEBENDA and TIRIL are plesantly laid out with Casurinas, Black Palms, and Pandanus Palms. This would suggest that these people are on peaceful terms with all around or that they are a strong group or have strong affiliations.

Friday, 1st. July : At TIRIL. By 09.00 some 150 men, women and children had gathered at our camp. I addressed them on our law and explained the N. R. O.'s. The people were invited to ask questions to clear up any doubts that they might have. I also emphasised that if at any time they had any problems they should not hesitate in asking the advice from the officer at NIPA.

At 12.00 with headmen and the N. C. O. I visited a hamlet to the South in the hollow of the REBAM Creek - about an hours walk distant. I told all that I would like to see them at the camp to-morrow. Some garden areas were seen on very steep slopes with visible outcrops of limestone. Rough gardens and poor quality produce.

On our way back to camp we visited the POR Falls on the upper ARO Creek. The creek here drops some 400 feet in a series of falls. Dense bush surrounds the area. Some good millable timber (including five Cedar) were seen but most of it is inaccessible at present. Returned to camp at 17.00 hrs.

Saturday, 2nd. July : The people of TIRIL and neighbouring hamlets gathered at the camp early this morning as requested yesterday. Further discussions were held and on conclusion a census was compiled. All went smoothly and 136 names were recorded. When this was completed the patrol departed for EGENDA, at 12.12. Local natives were engaged as carriers for the patrol.

The patrol passed through the hamlet of BIAL at 12.20. Then descended to the AR Creek, crossed one of its feeder streams, the MALAMBU, at 12.55 and proceeded on through dense rain-forest. Crossed the head of the AR stream at 13.50. The walk from here to EGENDA was an uncomfortable one through an over-grown cane-grass track. Camp made at EGENDA at 14.10. Altitude 6270 feet.

Sunday, 3rd. July : Returned to NIPA to replenish certain stores. The patrol took a route to the North of the usual path. Not far from EGENDA the emission of a certain gas from the ground was noted. A faint odour - similar to that of high octane fuel - was discernible. The area of emission was covered by water so that the issuing gas gave the water the appearance of 'boiling'. A match was thrown down and the gas ignited spontaneously.

The patrol returned to the camp from NIPA on the usual track. This is a very wet and slippery track; it seems that it always has been and always will be until orders are given to build a descant road. Drainage of the road would not involve undue hardship.

Monday, 4th. July : At EGENDA. The number of people who visited the camp today were disappointingly few - less than half the known population of this hamlet. Some discussions were held, but I decided to postpone the discussions of value to the group as a whole until to-morrow. I hope that this will encourage a fuller attendance; the people here have indicated that this will be the case.

I took the opportunity this afternoon of visiting some nearby gardens. Mostly in appearance they are rough and poorly laid out. Few are fenced. I believe more could be brought into cultivation if the land was drained. However, even so the soil is not good and consequently produce would probably be poor quality. Some groves of Pandanus Palms were seen in a hollow to the East of the camp. Other garden areas are situated on the slopes of hills to the North.

Native foods purchased in P. M.

Tuesday, 5th. July : At EGENDA. Some 400 people assembled this morning. This group included a few strangers, but not many. The 'Provisional Census' was called, and it was noted that several people had difficulty in recollecting the names previously given to the Officer. This slowed down proceedings considerably.

When all were accounted for and a few names added, discussions were held. On conclusion one minor dispute was discussed and the matter straightened.

Light rain began falling at 14.00 hrs. This made onward movement of the patrol undesirable, especially since we are relying on the good-will of the people to assist in the movement of patrol equiptment.

A runner from NIPA arrived at the camp at 12.50 with mail and stores.

Wednesday, 6th. July : Light continuous rain fell till 11.00 hrs. Camp then broken and with the assistance from local villagers the patrol moved out for ELMANDA on the headwaters of the Nembi River.

Travelled generally North, skirting the BOI knoll. Climbed a saddle (NEL) and then descended to the HERAL Creek, at 12.45. The stream bed is quite broad with some good gravel and some sand. Altitude 5995 feet. Passed through HAGOP at 13.00 - the first of the SOI ceremonial grounds. From here digressed down to the junction of the HERAL with the NEMBI. Then followed up this river to where it divides into the KEREP Creek (to West) and the NEMP Creek (to East). Crossed the KEREP at 13.50 and climbed the spur between the two creeks. Camp made at ELMANDA ceremonial ground at 14.05. Altitude here 6200 feet.

Some extensive garden areas were noted on the flats of the NEMP and KEREP Creeks near their junction. This together with broad walking tracks, numerous houses and several small ceremonial grounds suggests a relatively high density population here.

Light rain this afternoon was followed by a cold night.

Thursday, 7th. July : At ELMANDA. This morning a good percentage of the SOI group assembled at INGIN, a ceremonial ground a short distance above the camp site. At 09.30 I addressed them, emphasising again that they were at liberty to ask questions wher ever they desired.

The response to the discussions was particularly good and at the conclusion a census was compiled. Some 250 men, women, and children had their names recorded. However, judging from houses and gardens seen I would say that even a total of 400 would be a conservetive estimate.

Returned to camp at 16.00 hrs.

Light rain again and a cold night.

Friday, 8th. July : Patrol departed ELMANDA for the MARK group at 09.25. Descended the spur to the East of ELMANDA, crossed the KEREP at ALGO and proceeded up the creek for a short distance to LORHEG, at 09.50. This is a ceremonial ground of the LAROP people - said to be a sub-group of the KOMIA clan on the far side of the range. After waiting here a short while some 80 people assembled. They were addressed shortly and a census was taken. I decided against spending more time here as I intend to concentrate on the parent group (KOMIA) in due course.

Patrol proceeded on to KOSER'RE, arriving there at 14.00. A small deserted ceremonial ground, PEP, was visited en route. At KOSER'RE a good camp was quickly set up. Altitude 6270 feet.

Saturday, 9th. July. : At KOSER'RE. I learned this morning that this MARK group has two garden areas. One is located on the Kolipa Creek, a feeder stream of the Lai River; the other is located here on the Kerep. I further learned that the former group was censused in the last few days by a Mendi patrol operating through the Lai. This patrol has had a defenite influence on this group. An influential man from the Kolipa Creek visited the patrol this morning and suggested he could assist in gathering his people here for a census. I agreed to this as it ensures godd contact and a more effective means for discussions.

At 10.00 I gave a short address to some 200 people and then proceeded to take their names.

This afternoon I visited some gardens to the North of the camp. A second ceremonial ground of this group - OMBAN - was also visited. Later I climbed a spur and from here it appeared that this group is the limit of population along the Kerep Creek.

Today rumours were circulating of an approaching 'Kebil' ceremony in the Karinj group.

Sunday, 10th. July : Camp broken at 10.00 hrs. and the patrol departed for PÜGBÜG - the principal ceremonial ground of the KOMIA people. Returned South along the KEREP Creek to PEP and then turned West. The patrol climbed steeply a saddle between a high cone to the North, MOI, and an undulating range to the South, PEP. At the highest point in the saddle - 7070 feet - I was suprised to see new garden areas. These are being planted mainly with sweet-potato. From the saddle

an excellent view was obtained of the KEREP Valley and also the pockets of population immediately below.

From here on the patrol descended effortlessly to the ceremonial ground, PÜGBÜG. Altitude 6535 feet. I waited here till camp was established and then - leaving the Corporal in charge as care-taker - proceeded on down to NIPA. Our camp is a little less than an hour's walk distant from the station. Remained NIPA over night.

Monday, 11th. July : Today I escorted the Rev. Father Senan Glass of the Capuchin Mission, Mendi, around a large section of the NIPA Basin. The intention was to show the Father, as the Mission's representative, over certain areas which might be favourable for mission development.

Departed NIPA at 08.50. Crossed the UR'RUL Creek some 250 yds. from the station and proceeded to KUARE (KWAR'RE) and thence ANDUWARI. These hamlets are part of the WOLAL group. From here we walked leisurely on to URUWA and WALHAMA over gently undulating country. No problem for road construction here. From WALHAMA extending to the South is a long flat ridge. It may have possibilities for an airstrip site and it will be investigated when I return with the patrol later. Proceeded down to the ceremonial ground of TESJANDA which has been cleared for festivities to-morrow. Noticed from here a large cave opening in the limestone bluff to the West. We returned to WALHAMA and the North-West, walking easily over an even ridge. Noticed a number of completely devastated ceremonial grounds - results of extensive tribal fighting and a scorched-earth policy. Recrossed the UR'RAL CReek at 14.00 and thence climbed sharply to our camp at PÜGBÜG. Rested here a short while before escorting Father Senan back to NIPA. Remained at NIPA over night.

Tuesday, 12th. July : In company with other station personnel, self with police escort, interpreter and guides visited the 'Kebil' ceremony. The crux of the ritual was performed at the TESJANDA ceremonial groung. When this was completed the people adjourned to SJOMKABEL for traditional dancing and singing. It was noted that this ground is prepared for the pig-kill which follows to-morrow.

Mr. Butler and party returned direct to the station. Self with escort visited some well laid out gardens to the North. Also visited the cave's enterence, JIMHAN, but found that there is little depth of cave inside. This place, however,

is apparently revered as that when the most influential men die they are laid out on beds in the cave's mouth. Five skeletons - one unpleasantly fresh - were seen, and other bones were scattered on the ground.

Returned to NIPA at 13.30 and rested a short while. Proceeded on to our camp at 14.30.

Wednesday, 13th. July : At PUGBUG. Many of the people from the KOMIA group have gone to the pig-kill and will not return till late this afternoon.

Self with interpreter and a few locals who were not directly interested in the ceremony visited neighbouring gardens and houses. There is a slight variation in house design as compared with other houses seen on the Nembi's headwaters. Some peanut and corn seed was distributed and instructions and demonstrations of planting and cultivation were personally given.

Thursday, 14th. July : This morning some 200 people assembled at our camp. All conducted themselves in an orderly manner and waited patiently for the others from the periphery of the parish to arrive. By 09.30 it appeared that as many as were coming had come and thereupon discussions were held. When completed the people were asked to co-operate in a census. This was then compiled without incident.

At 14.00 camp was broken and the patrol moved off for INGIRIP. Crossed the MONDOBA Creek at 14.15 and then turned North on to a low ridge, ANDUWARI. Arrived at INGIRIP at 14.35. Camp made. Altitude 6370 feet.

Later as the evening settled down it became apparent that camp had been established unpleasantly close to a new grave hidden somewhere in the pit-pit.

Friday, 15th. July : Cold wind and rain prevailed till 10.00 hrs. At 10.30 the overcast sky broke rapidly and gave birth to some pleasant sun.

By 12.00 hrs. some 200 people from the SUMA group had gathered around the camp. Discussions were held and after this a census was compiled. All was completed by 16.30.

A large supply of native foods was purchased this afternoon. I believe it better to buy a surplus - the cost is small,

and to turn people away does not promote good will with people who have come some distance in good faith.

Light rain during the late evening.

Saturday, 16th. July : Self with three police and the interpreter departed for KWAIBAL at 09.00. Const. DEMAI remained as care-taker of the camp at INGIRIP. KWAIBAL is the principal ceremonial ground of the TOMBERA people - a sub-clan of the larger SUMA group. Proceeded West to the ANDUWARI ridge, climbed very sharply and then traversed its top for a short distance. Arrived KWAIBAL at 09.35.

The group TOMBERA seemed somewhat diffident towards the patrol when we first arrived at INGIRIP. However, this has apparently passed for many of the people were at the ceremonial ground waiting our arrival. The people were made to sit down, discussions were held and a census was taken.

Judging from the large family groups recorded at the beginning of the census, and the large number of 'single' but 'eligible' males at the conclusion, I would say that this census is not accurate as far as family groups are concerned. Nevertheless the word of the people was accepted at this stage and the results will be useful for statistical information. Moreover, the object of the census was purely a means of consolidation and bringing the people together and not as a means to an end.

Retired to our camp at INGIRIP at 14.00.

Sunday, 17th. July : At INGIRIP. This morning I visited some gardens to the West. I have noticed that during the relatively dry weather experienced by this patrol the people of many hamlets have commenced building new gardens. Secondary growth has been cleared and many fires from the burning-off were seen today. Some peanut and corn seed was distributed and instructions on planting and cultivation given.

In the afternoon I visited a forest stand to the North-West of KWAIBAL. This seems to be an almost pure stand of (M)PEL, or the Mendi KARAIPE. Although the stand is fairly small, covering about 300 acres, it nevertheless contains some good millable timber. It may prove a handy source for any bridge-works undertaken in this area.

Monday, 18th. July : Patrol moved from INGIRIP to a hamlet on the East bank of the WAGA River. Camp broken at 08.15 and with assistance from local villagers as carriers the patrol departed at 08.40. Travelled North through WALEYSEB and then North-West to MONG'GEP at 09.40 and PUGUMABIL at 09.55. Continued on to KINDA (of the INJA parish) at 10.20 and WRAEYA (of the WENJUP parish) at 10.45. Much of the country seen today is characterized by sink holes and indeterminate drainage. Camp made at WRAEYA. Altitude 6650 feet.

During the afternoon some 250 people gathered around the camp as if the patrol had provided some informal social occasion. Native situation here appears to be quiet and reasonable.

Native foods purchased included a large quantity of edible pit-pit.

At 16.50 Const. TONGON reported as a replacement for Const. GIGME who is on transfer to Mendi Headquarters.

Tuesday, 19th. July : Reports were received of a 'Moga' settlement between the two groups INJA and (H)OMBAL. Payment was said to have been arranged at KAINJ, a ceremonial ground on the Western bank of the WAGA River. Some of the natives from this area were recipients of payment and so it was desired to find out further details, and also to examine the native situation on the Western side.

A company of two police, interpreter, self, and leaders of the INJA group crossed the WAGA River (altitude 5910) and climbed steeply out of the gorge to ALIEP. Here it was learned that 24 Mother-of-Pearl shell had been paid from OMBAL to INJA for two deaths incurred in tribal fighting some time ago. It was said that OMBAL and INJA are traditional enemies. However, tension over recent months has gradually relaxed and the two groups are on more amiable terms. This I believe, and it is supported by several new gardens which could be seen down the valley. This area is densely populated.

Certain Huri traits were noticed amongst the people - a slight difference in stature, the occasional Huri wig, the ropes of giri-giri, the Huri smoking pipes and also the 'pan' pipes. I understand from the interpreter that there is a slight dialectial change here.

One of the leaders from here said he believed that the white people (or more correctly to them, the 'red' people) had descended from the sky. Asked to elaborate on this the native said that he could not. Nevertheless it was obvious that it was not that he could not, but rather that he was reluctant to do so.

Some dense garden areas were noted to the West and I desired to look at these as a means of estimating population. Having ascertained that the people are on friendly terms with the INJA people the party proceeded there.

On the way a native with a bad arrow wound in the forearm sought advice from the patrol. His kin explained that they had killed many pigs to appease the spirits but that his condition had only continued to deteriorate. The wound appeared gangrenous, his arm badly swollen, and it appeared to me that he will certainly die without medical attention. I suggested to his people that they carry him down to NIPA for medical attention, but they were strongly opposed to this. Nothing else could be done and so the patrol moved on.

The man is WABISJO / KOBES of IBAL, a member of the (H)OMBAL line. He was injured in a clash with the KIL group from the KENE Creek, to the West of the WAGA River. The people hinted that a further clash will take place if the injured man dies.

The party continued on to the head of the KUMUK range - altitude 7230 at EMEM. Immediately below to the West are garden areas in the KENE Creek inlet. Population is said to extend down to the WAGA River. However, dense valley mist obscured our visibility. It is thought that there is not much more population to the North of the creek from this point.

The party traced its steps back to the WAGA River through KAINJ where the Moga payment was made. We crossed the WAGA at a point lower than that crossed this morning. The bridge here is in bad need of repair, and the water below is nothing less than a very turbulent stream. Continued on to our camp at WRAKYA through KINDA .

Wednesday, 20th. July : Discussions were held with representatives from both the INJA and WENJUP groups before camp was broken at 09.45. The patrol moved on for UGUN at 10.05. We retraced our steps to KINDA and then continued on South on the left wall of the WAGA River. Walking down the bank

was relatively easy, and we arrived at the ceremonial ground, UGUN (KIL group) at 11.40. Camp made. Altitude 6460 feet.

I desired to proceed to a high ridge on the Western bank of the river to observe population tendencies further West and South- this area was obscured by cloud yesterday. With the help of guides we descended into the Waga gorge, crossed the river at 5600 feet, and then started climbing with some difficulty up the far wall. From a razor-back spur at 6410 feet a commanding view was had to the South but was somewhat limited to the West, where the WAGA now turns. Conditions were good and estimates of population made.We continued on to a ceremonial ground, HANDAMAR, at the top of the ridge - altitude 6980. Further extensive views to the East were obtained. The party then descended to the river once again, climbed, and returned to camp without encountering any incident.

A runner from MIPA arrived at the camp in the P. M. with advice that this patrol is to conclude its activities temporarily and return to MIPA to-morrow.

Thursday, 21st. July : Camp broken at 07.00 and patrol departed for MIPA at 07.20. We took a direct route back, passing through BOIA ceremonial ground at 08.20 (KIL group) and SJOMBERA at 08.55. We crossed the UA'RAL Creek at 09.50, proceeded on to MIPA and reported to the office at 10.05.

For the following six days (Friday 22nd. to Wednesday 27th. July) the patrol was engaged in working out from the station to nearby villages on routine inspection and consolidation. The patrol returned to the station each night. On Thursday, 28th. July the patrol resumed its activities in the field.

Friday, 22nd. July : Patrol visited MEREP and FULIMAL groups on village inspection. Little contact had been made with these people since this patrol last visited them. The native situation was found to be quiet and satisfactory, and the patrol returned to MIPA.

Saturday, 23rd. July : Patrol visited the SOI and KOMIA groups on village inspection. We followed up the Nembi River to the Kerep Creek and then cut South through FÜGBÜG. Native situation here is also satisfactory. Returned to NIPA at 17.30 hrs.

Sunday, 24th. July : Observed.

Monday, 25th. July : Visited those people of the (H)INJIP group who live in the proximity of the Nembi River. The patrol proceeded as far as EBIL which is about one and a half hour's walk from the station. These people have not in the past maintained close contact with the station - mainly because their former enemies lie between them and NIPA. Nevertheless the native situation was found to be quiet.

Tuesday, 26th. July : Patrol visited the remainder of the people of the (H)INJIP group who live in the South-Western section of the Basin. Village inspection showed the native situation to be satisfactory.

Wednesday, 27th. July : The writer made an investigation into the complaint that a leader of a sub-group of the HINJIP people had been threatened with assult by another native. The patrol proceeded to FURIL where an inquiry was made. It emerged, however, that the complaint had been twisted and that the complainant had since been offered a pig to silence matters. No police action was taken though a warning was given that any future distortions of the truth may be followed by Court proceedure.

Thursday, 28th. July : Patrol gear assembled and patrol departed for BOIA at 09.00 to resume its activities in the field. Crossed the UR'RAL Creek at 09.12 and continued on over undulating cane grassed ridges to SJOMBERA, at 10.00. This is a small ceremonial ground of the OBAL people, a sub-group of the larger KIL group. These people also have affiliations with the OBAL people of the TROINTS group at EGENDA. Continued on to BOIA, arriving at 10.30. Camp made. Altitude 6135 feet.

The people from this hamlet and from SJOMBERA assembled at 12.30. Discussions were held and following this a census was compiled.

Large quantities of native foods - mainly sweet-potato - were brought to the camp for purchase in the afternoon

Friday, 29th. July : This morning a number of the people from UGUE visied our camp. These people also belong to the KIL group but were absent from discussions yesterday - their hamlet lies about an hour's walk to the North of here. I addressed them shortly and then took a census. When this was completed camp was broken and we departed for SEGENDA.

The patrol took a route lying between the Karinj Range (Mount JONG'GURU) and the JUMBIEN limestone hills. Arrived at SEGENDA at 12.40 - an hour's walk from BOIA. Camp made. Altitude 6050 feet.

Rain this afternoon prevented all but little contact from being made with the people.

Saturday, 30th. July : At SEGENDA. It seems that most of the people of the KARLEL group live well up on the slopes of the Karinj Range. Reports indicate that these people suffered defeat badly in the days of fighting and they were forced to evacuate their homes on the Western side of the Basin and move to higher and safer ground. Their enemies (members of the HARON alliance, and in particular the TROINTS group) pursued a scorched-earth policy and destroyed many of their houses, gardens, and ceremonial grounds. Only gardens to the West of the YOR'R Creek and the ceremonial ground of SEGENDA seem to have been left untouched. It appears that since the establishment of the Patrol Post at NIPA a few families have remade gardens around SEGENDA, but most still live on the range. At least, this was the explanation given to the patrol for the delay which the people took to congregate at the camp. From my observations it would seem that this is mostly true.

At 11.30 the people were addressed and a census was compiled. Later I visited some gardens along the YOR'R Creek. These are well made and much effort has gone into fencing.

Sunday, 31st. July : Today a census of the YORAL group was compiled. Their principal ceremonial ground, SJOMKAHEL, lies less than a quarter of an hour's walk from here. At 09.00 with the interpreter and headmen of the group I proceeded there. We found many of the people had already assembled and were seated. I addressed them but discussions were interrupted a few times by some very turbulent children - they succeeded in distracting the attention of the gathering as a whole. However, the census was compiled without incident.

On completion I took a rough traverse over a level stretch of land between UKU'WA and WALHAMA on the East bank of the YOR'R Creek. This ridge has possibilities for an airstrip site. Unfortunately time did not permit to make a thorough investigation of its limits, nor to examine the soil depth.

In the late afternoon a few gardens were inspected and more peanut and corn seed was distributed. Planting of the seed was personally supervised.

Monday, 1st. August : Camp broken and patrol departed for KUARE (KWAR'RE) at 08.35. We crossed the YOR'R Creek immediately below SEGENDA, just a short distance from where the stream emerges impromptu out of a spring. Passed through (H)UKU'WA at 08.55 and then walked easily over this undulating country. Camp made at KUARE at 09.15. Altitude 5780 feet.

I had hoped to hold discussions with the WOLAL group today. However, many of the men had gone down to the station on buisness whilst all the women and children were apparently dispersed in the gardens.

In the late afternoon I visited the station but returned to KUARE for the night.

Tuesday, 2nd. August : This morning a very pleasing number of WOLAL people attended the camp. Discussions were held and the people listened attentively. Later a census was compiled. All was completed by 15.00.

Camp was broken and at 15.10 the patrol departed for OBILA! We proceeded via the Methodist Mission at PURIL. Crossed the YOR'R Creek at 15.45 and then climbed a slight ridge. Camp made at OBILA at 15.55. Altitude 5960 feet.

Large supplies of native foods were brought in for purchase.

Wednesday, 3rd. August : At OBILA. The people of the (H)INJIP group were very slow to assemble. It was 11.00 before our efforts even looked like they were going to meet with success. At 11.30 discussions were held and later a census was compiled. By 13.30 there was a very large number of people here - more than could be conveniently handled in one afternoon and consequently one group had to be sent back to their hamlet at MUNG'GURE. I will visit them to-morrow to complete matters.

Light rain this evening was followed by a cold night.

Thursday, 4th. August : A damp and miserable morning till 10.00 hrs. At 10.30 I proceeded to MUNG'GURE. The people quickly assembled and a census was compiled. One dispute was brought forward over the non-return of bride-price payment after a divorce. About a year ago this group was split in half by intertribal fighting. I know of two other divorces which followed as a result of this split.

This afternoon a visit was paid to the Methodist Mission at PURIL. Short discussions were had with the Rev. Keightley. He is apparently making good progress and the native situation here is good.

Further peanut and corn seed was distributed today.

Friday, 5th. August : Camp broken at OBILA at 08.25 and the patrol departed for ANAL. Travelled generally East to the Nembi River and crossed it near WIEP at 09.05. Then walked upstream on the East bank to ANAL. Camp made. Altitude 5785.

I was informed shortly after my arrival that the people of this parish have gone down to NIPA to fulfil certain station committments. Many of the women have also gone down to the station, and it seemed that little contact would be made with these people today. I therefore decided to visit EBIL, a hamlet on the Nembi River to the South.

Retraced our steps to WIEP, crossed the river at 10.10 and climbed to SOA (TORWA), at 10.30. Arrived EBIL at 10.50.

Only a token number of people came forward to meet us. However, this number did include three of the influential men and so the walk was not wasted. Short discussecussions were had and later those who were present had their names recorded.

The native situation here is not as good as elsewhere, but just the same it could not be described as bad.

Departed EBIL at 16.00 and returned to camp by way of WIKP, at 17.15.

Saturday, 6th. August : At ANAL. A damp and overcast morning did not encourage people to leave their homes and visit the camp. However, about 11.00 the weather broke and immediately family groups started converging upon the camp. By 12.00 some 300 people were assembled and at 12.30 the 'provisional'census was checked. This was found to be fairly accurate and was of some assistance to this patrol. A further 73 names were added for records. Discussions were then held. One minor dispute was brought up for advice.

Further rain fell in the afternoon shortly after the people had dispersed.

Sunday, 7th. August : Camp broken at 09.00 and with the assistance from local villagers in movement of patrol equiptment all returned to NIPA. Reported to the Officer-in-Charge at 09.45. Patrol carriers paid off.

END OF PATROL DIARY

---:::::::::---

COMMENTS AND OBSERVATIONS :

1. NATIVE AFFAIRS

This patrol had as its objective the consolidation of influence in an area adjacent to the Nembi River and including the Nipa Basin. It was thought that consolidation could best be achieved by a slow and methodical patrol which would visit each hamlet and which would encourage the people to discuss their problems. Thus group discussions were frequently held and many aspects of government - native relations considered, though emphasis was usually placed on our code of justice.

The nature of patrolling pursued enabled the writer to obtain a comprehensive first hand impression of the area visited.

(a) NATIVE SITUATION : Generally this can be described as very satisfactory for a people who have really had but a short time of contact with the Administration. Some minor disputes were brought up for advice. They were discussed, but none were of such a nature as to bring them before the Court for Native Matters. My impressions on these events are that the people are feeling their way within a new authority and they are naturally reluctant to proceed too far too fast.

The discussions which were held should do much to remove any fear which the people may have had towards the Administration. The people were told in clear terms what we are here for and how we can help them. Nevertheless when asked if they desired to raise any questions at the conclusion of discussions their answer was always in the negative. They all replied to this effect: We have heared what you have to say, but how can we ask questions?

I believe that only one of the disputes discussed needs to be recorded as that certain extraordinary circumstances concerning it arose.

Back in mid-May a clash broke out between two sub-groups of the TROINTS people from EGENDA. Four were injured, two seriously. We could not afford to watch idly a skirmish of this nature so

close to the station and thus a warning was sent out that the Government would intervene unless hostilities ceased promptly. To my suprise bows and arrows were laid down without any necessary intervention on our part and further, the people brought in the two seriously injured natives. Both were flown out to Mendi for medical attention shortly after their arrival at Nipa.

Two days later we were advised from Mendi that the condition of one of the natives was satisfactory but that of the other was serious. Nevertheless both were expected to survive. The following day, however, the two natives - apparently frightened and bewildered by the strange environment of a hospital, and feeling a little recovered - absconded. They managed to reach only the Lai River before one died. The other, too exhausted to move on, remained with friends in the Lai for some time until his wound healed. He then returned home. However, the death of one thus provided a new set of circumstances.

The events which led to the above clash are said to have originated in this way. A native woman HEAL / INJIP was working in her garden. A youth ENGEMA / NAGA walked past her garden as he went to gather firewood. HEAL claimed that ENGEMA took her by the hand, and that from this she thought he desired sexual contact. ENGEMA denied touching her, but whether he did or didn't is not really important in relation to the events which followed.

HEAL ran down to her house and told her near kin that ENGEMA had attempted to seduce her. This story then rapidly sped from mouth to mouth and hamlet to hamlet to HALOM / TAGON, the husband of HEAL. HALOM was near SUMBI in the Lai Valley at the time. Now as the story travelled it became distorted, and by the time it reached HALOM his wife was said to have been raped.

HALOM hurried home post-haste and collected his bow and arrows and tomahawk. He did not bother to consult his wife. He continued on up to the house of ENGEMA, cut down all the banana trees, a couple of Pandanus Palms, and then burnt two houses. The youth ENGEMA emphaticly denied having had sexual intercourse with HALOM's wife and cut off a finger to make this point quite clear. Still HALOM disbelieved.

The father of the youth, NAGA / TORA, who had just now arrived, became very disturbed at the proceedings. Meanwhile KELAP /TAGON, brother of NALOM, had stolen a fighting shield from one of the houses destroyed and as he ran ENGEMA chased him swinging at the shield with a tomahawk. NAGA then shot the first arrow hitting KELAP in the hand.

KELAP returned the fire, hitting TOLIP / NAGA, brother of ENGEMA, in the chest but not seriously wounding him. To this NAGA replied with another arrow, hitting NALOM in the back as he ran. He fell. KOMP / IALISI, a member of the same group as the youth, then raced down with the intention of ensuring NALOM's death. However, NALOM turned, and as he saw KOMP coming he fired an arrow hitting him in the chest and inflicting a serious wound.

The fight ceased at this stage and shortly after the warning of Government intervention was received. I believe that this stayed further hostilities. NALOM and KOMP were sent out to Mendi for medical attention.

That afternoon Mr. Butler investigated the situation and settled the matter administratively. However, when the two natives absconded from the hospital a situation was created which was previously unforeseeable.

KOMP died in the Lai Valley on his way home. His body was ferried onwards by different natives to EGENDA. Traditionally of course his death demanded a death from one of NALOM's kin, but the Government was at Nipa and it would surely intervene in any further conflict. Five Mother-of-Pearl and four pigs were thus accepted as compensation for KOMP's death.

As I patrolled the area an influential member of NALOM's group, HABOL / WABI, expressed fear that the matter was not really settled and that he would be the next victim. However, I was at EGENDA for four and a half days and the matter was thoroughly investigated. It appeared that HABOL's fears were his own creation, though these might be reasonable ones. No open threats of any size have been made. To my mind the native situation at EGENDA is now quiet and reasonable.

(b) GROUP ALLIANCES : An interesting feature about the area patrolled is that the whole population is divided vaguely into two camps. To the East of the Basin lie members of the HARON Alliance and to the West lies the KARINJ Alliance. These alliances appear as very loose federations of clans. It seems that the members of each federation are not really bound to assist one another, but rather that time has created a certain tradition.

Members of the HARON Alliance include: PULIMAL, HERREP, TROINTS, SOI, MARK, KOMIA and SUMA groups, in a North-South direction. The particular KARINJ Alliance under consideration includes: YORAL, WOLAL, KARLEL and KIL groups, also in a North-South direction. Actually the 'KARINJ' people extend well into the South and well into the North, and also (although these people don't seem to recognise the fact) turn Eastwards and penetrate the headwaters of the Lai River. Similarly the HARON people extend to the South (reputably as far as PABARONGA), though they do not penetrate the North as dense bush at the head of the Nembi River presents a population barrier.

KARINJ and HARON are both relative terms. A man will frequently say to an outsider that he is a member of the KARINJ people when he wishes to point out the area from which he comes. If, however, he wishes to emphasise that his group is a large one he will refer to himself as being a member of the KARINJ-KARINJ. Again, if even only a small number of natives from roughly the same area are together they may refer to themselves as being members of the KARINJ-KARINJ-KARINJ. Notwithstanding that within the KARINJ group it is more usual for individual members to think of or define themselves by their own particular clan or - more commonly - place.

The position is exactly the same within the HARON people. The term may be repeated once or twice, depending upon how emphasis is desired.

Now although the KARINJ people extend for many miles as an unbroken chain, there seems to be little flow of social intercourse between all members. Rather, to draw an analogy, it appears as a language group but contains a number of different dialects: each dialectial group tends to keep to itself. Moreover, from my experience at the ceremonies visited,

it would appear that influence flows mainly East-West, and not South-North (that is, up the rivers and valley systems) as one might expect.

Most of the members of the HARON Alliance seem to have some affiliations with people in the Lai Valley, many of them being close relatives or affinal kin. This fact emerged from the number of people from hamlets in the Lai and Mendi who visited the ceremony at ARO. Furthermore, Bird-of-Paradise plumes and Mother-of-Pearl shell are traded through or loaned specifically for these occasions.

Unfortunately I am not so well acquainted with the position in the KARINJ.

Members of the HARON and KARINJ alliances form nothing more but a loose federation of clans at best. There seems a tendency for marriages to take place within the alliance and so strengthen bonds between clans, but otherwise I can see no means of cementing the alliance. Perhaps an investigation of land tenure might throw some light on the subject. In any case - in common throughout the Territory - there is no authority which could control the members of the alliance. Indeed it is difficult to find influential men who can control even small groups.

Although the two names KARINJ and HARON always stood out in time of war, to my knowledge they never at any time acted as two co-ordinated groups. I give as an example: about a generation ago the two groups SOI and MARK (of the Haron Alliance) joined forces on a sortie and raided a KARINJ group to the West. They were successful, but later these two groups SOI and MARK fought over the spoils of war. However, it was said that the rift did not last long for the people considered themselves as of the one parentage. Later they joined forces again on another raid against the KARINJ.

The most serious conflicts seem to have been between the SOI, TROINTS, and KOMIA (HARON Alliance) and the WOLAL, YORAL, and KARLEL (KARINJ). This fighting has left its scars throughout the Nipa Basin. However, I understand that for the duration of these conflicts the PULIMAL (HARON) and KIL (KARINJ) lent only sporadic assistance. Thus it would appear that groups are not bound to assist.

In conclusion to this section it should be mentioned that the HINJIP people, together with four small groups - ARM, INJA, WAREP, and WANGK - formed a traditional alliance of their own, POLSJUAL. This stood traditionally not against KARINJ or HARON but against another group to the South, SEMINAL. I know little about the activities of the latter. Finally, we should note that in very recent times the HINJIP have experienced a sever rupture which may possibly destroy the POLSJUAL Alliance.

(c) RESETTLEMENT : The traditional tribal fighting of the NIPA Basin area was characterised by an uncompromising scorched-earth policy. The assailants, not content with claiming a few lives, pursued a policy aimed at the complete destruction of all property of their opponents. Houses were burnt, food-bearing trees cut down, and trees of ceremonial value ring-barked. Several devestated ceremonial grounds which bear evidence of the above are located in the Nipa Basin.

Warfare was practiced not so much for the acquisition of land or wealth but rather as a reprisal for some previous misadventure. Thus when groups were forced to evacuate certain areas there was seldom any large scale occupation of the vacated land. Rather, it became a no-man's land, or an area relinquished for the use of a future skirmish.

The NIPA station site itself was formerly a fighting ground and no-man's land. The TROINTS people who had once gardened nearby had retreated to EGENDA. Two of their ceremonial grounds were destroyed. On the other hand, the TROINTS together with the SOI had routed the YORAL and KARLEL groups and forced them to seek safer ground on mountain slopes. Again, the SOI were forced back to the headwaters of the NEMBI by the WOLAL people.

Since the establishment of the Patrol Post and the cessation of fighting some family groups are moving back to their former land. This was noted particularly on the Western side of the Basin where the YORAL and KARLEL have built extensive new gardens along the YOR'R Creek. The KOMIA people have built new gardens lower in the Basin, as have the TROINTS. There is also some talk that the SOI people will resettle on their former land immediately above the station.

(d) LAND AVAILABILITY : It is not possible at this stage to give statistical information on how much land is owned by whom, what the population is, or what the population density is. The area is not sufficiently consolidated to enable figures for this information to be compiled. Moreover we must assume, I believe, that over the next few years the population will continue to be unstable as different groups move back to reclaim formerly owned land.

The only information that can be given is that under present circumstances the people have sufficient land to more than maintain their traditional mode of livelihood. There are large tracts of land in the Basin which could be brought into cultivation. This should provide adequately for both natural population increases and for expansion and development.

Development will probably take the form of cash-cropping. Climate and soil is similar to that of the upper Mendi Valley and should be equally favourable to the production of the usual Highland cash-crops. Altitude of this area would average between 5,600 and 5,900 feet A. S. L. and rainfall would probably be about 120 inches per annum.

The main problem will be to over-come the present lack of access. Apart from roads, this area is never likely to attract European investment unless a reasonable airstrip can be built.

The broad upper Waga Valley with a suspected higher population density might have an equal or better potential for development, and this should be borne in mind. However, the lower area to my knowledge is more difficult of access and would thus be less attractive to development.

2. CENSUS and STATISTICS

An initial census was not an objective of this patrol; names were recorded purely as an aid to consolidation. On the whole this course proved very successful. A good percentage of the people always visited the patrol for discussions and the census taken has provided valuable statistical information.

The Village Population Register for the area is not attached. Although the response to the census was good the actual arrangement of family groups was not. At this stage the people do not readily appreciate our differentiation of true families and extended families - or if they do they do not show it. To them they consider it fair enough if that a man is absent but that his wife and family present, then his wife could be grouped with his brother's wives, and his children with his brother's children. What does it matter if a boy's cousin is intergrated with him as a brother?

When one group - TOMBERA - was censused it was found that at first the familiy groups were very large. There were two or three wives to every man, and numerous children attached. However, at the conclusion there was an extraordinary number of 'single' but 'eligible' males.

Against this other groups co-operated in a way which would please almost any Officer conducting an initial census.

The statistical information gained is considered valuable for it provides us with a basic minimum population on which to work. Indeed, it is my opinion that no more than 80% of the people visited have been recorded, and this will probably be confirmed by later patrols.

During this patrol 3056 people had their names recorded. This figure includes 4·9% of the population who were recorded as absentees. Only three were engaged in employment, and these at NIPA. None attend schools: educational facilities are not yet available to these people. Of the total recorded 1560 are males and 1496 females.

A further 916 people have been censused under similar circumstances by Mr. Butler,P.O. Patrol Report NIPA No.4 of 1959/60 refers. Two of these groups, PULIMAL (275) and Troints (386) were visited by this patrol. The 'Provisional Census' of each was checked and on the whole it proved to be of assistance. The PULIMAL census was found to be fairly accurate. A further 74 names were added to this book.

Thus the basic minimum population of the NIPA Basin and its environs presently stands at 3972.

Statistical information of this patrol is attached as APPENDIX 'C'. Some attempt has been made to estimate (conservatively) other groups and this information is also provided. I believe with but a few exceptions (Group A, APPENDIX 'C') that any effort to census these groups would be premature.

3. VILLAGE OFFICIALS :

No Village Officials have been appointed in the area. It is my opinion that the people have not yet reached a stage of development where they could appreciate the obligations and responsibilities of Officials.

For the present we are working through various 'important' men who hold 'traditional influence' - such as this may be. This influence is very loosely defined at best: it is not hereditary. Rather, it seems to be gained as a youth approaches maturity and lost again as maturity approaches age. It is in fact more of a respect behaviour than a ruling authority.

Influence seems to be derived from a combination of personal wealth, fighting prowess, leadership in magico-religious festivities, and personality. In any group there are always at least two, three, or more influential men. Each has his own personal following. Occasionally one is outstanding and will win the admiration of others, but again it is more of a respect behaviour and not a superior authority.

An APPENDIX 'D' to the Report lists the more influential men who were contacted by this patrol. The size of the group of each is also indicated.

4. AGRICULTURE :

The people of the area patrolled practice shifting agriculture. Their staple crop is sweet-potato. Their lesser crops include the native banana, sugar-cane, wild cabbage, taro, edible pit-pit, native beans, and occasionally the yam. There are also food-bearing trees, two of which assume importance in their season: the Pandanus Palm and the Pear. The Pear is quite unique in the NIPA Basin and the tree is valued largely for

its fruit. Indeed, this area is well known by the Mendi people for the Pear. The tree is said to bear its fruit at about eighteen month intervals.

Gardens are concentrated in the Central-Southern Basin (HINJIP) and on the periphery of the Nipa Basin. They are located on the slopes of the Karinj Range. There are concentrated gardens on the tributaries NEMP and KEREP of the Nembi. There are also extensive garden areas on the Western bank of the WAGA River. Most of these gardens lie between an altitude of 5600 and 6500 feet A. S. L. Nevertheless a few gardens were found located up to 7,200 feet.

The surface soil of this area is mostly a black friable loam and appears fairly fertile. The sub-soil is a reddish-brown clay. Occasionally - when a group is not so well endowered with land - gardens are built on very steep limestone slopes. Here the parent rock or broken outcrops are often visible.

Where the terrain permits gardens are grouped together in threes or fours and may extend up to fifteen acres. It is generally considered desirable to build composite gardens for this way the communal labour required for such tasks as clearing and fencing is best utilized. Individual blocks usually cover between one and a half to two acres and are always fenced. When, however, a certain family gardens outside the group cultivations then the gardens are frequently left unfenced. Gardens on steep mountain slopes are seldom fenced.

New gardens are commenced during a dry period - that is, when the wild pit-pit flowers and when certain trees start to bear their fruit. These are the signs that the people look for. The locality of the garden is determined by the crops to be grown: sweet-potato requires fairly good drainage whilst sugar-cane and pit-pit are grown in the dips and hollows. The sweet-potato is planted in circular mounds of earth.

A cycle of rotation is probably loosely followed. Old garden areas were seen covered by kunai and cane grass. It was said that such areas are left fallow for a number of years - preferably till it is covered by secondary growth - before being brought back into use.

Where, in the Nipa Basin, gardens are used and reused the women will at the end of one cropping hollow out the centre of the mound of earth. This is then filled with grass and humus and the soil thrown back on top. I understand that this also is a feature of Huri gardening technique.

Many new gardens were being built whilst this patrol was in the field. Much effort was seen to go into the clearing off and fencing, whilst women were engaged in digging the mounds of earth and planting.

No signs of shortages of the staple crop or of other crops were seen by this patrol.

Some peanut and corn seed was distributed. Instructions and demonstrations on the planting and cultivation of the seed were personally given.

5. FORESTS

There is but little forest cover in the NIPA Basin. However, mountain ridges and peaks are densely covered with a rain forest and Mount AREP, which lies about two miles to the North of the station, should be able to fulfil this station's building requirements.

At the moment we have two pit-saw teams operating in a stand on the North-Western end of the airstrip. Some fairly good pine timber has been obtained from here. Nevertheless this stand is not extensive and it is only a matter of time before we will have to look further afield.

A small forest stand is located near the Methodist Mission at PURIL. Though this stand contains mainly the PEAR, other good millable trees are present and should suffice the Mission's activities.

An almost pure stand of (F)PEL, or the Mendi KARAIPE - a hard reddish wood - covers some 300 acres and is located North-West of KWAIBAL. Millable tree density per acre would be about 3 trees to the East and up to 7 trees per acre to the West. This forest will possibly prove a valuable source for bridge-works undertaken in this area.

Millable trees of the NIPA area include: PAWA (a pine), FPEL (or KARAIPE, a hardwood), MABU (a variety of Cedar), KABULA (?), and UBALAM (the TEAR or PYE) - to mention some. There are also a few HOOP PINE scattered through the area. These trees, however, have a ceremonial significance and it would be thus unwise to cut them - at least, at this present stage.

6. ROADS and BRIDGES :

No roads or bridges have yet been built radiating from the Patrol Post. For the present we are concentrating on making the airstrip serviceable. This is our first line of communications. When it has reached a sufficiently advanced stage efforts will be directed towards road work.

Two roads will probably receive emphasis. One road will in due course be pushed through to link up with the Mendi network. This road will probably go through, or near, EGENDA. The present walking track is continually plashy and unpleasant and any improvement would be a definite improvement. Construction of the road this far should not prove too difficult. Beyond EGENDA to cultivations in the Lai is a dense bush area. This may provide problems in relation to the labour supply. The Nembi River will have to be crossed at some point near NIPA, but this does not mean construction of an elaborate bridge.

The other road required would be one running in the general lie of the Valley, eventually from PABARONGA or the junction of the Nembi-Erave through the Nipa Basin and up the WAGA Valley to MAGARIMA. I believe that the NIPA - MARGARIMA leg should receive first emphasis.To my knowledge a denser population is located here. Moreover, construction of the road would be more rapid North than South, due to the terrain and population. The WAGA River will have to be crossed somewhere: this may provide difficulties.

Finally, with all due respect to the above statements, I believe that a road out to the Methodist Mission at PURIL (about one and a half miles distant) should be laid out in the near future. If this is not feasible at this stage then I believe that an improved walking track should be attempted.

7. MISSION ACTIVITIES :

Only one mission is constantly working in the NIPA area. This is the Methodist Overseas Mission. Their activities are concentrated around PURIL, [illegible] one and a half miles South of this station. (An appl[illegible]ion for a Special Lease for some 45 acres at PURIL is presently under consideration).

A representative from the Capuchin Mission, Mendi, makes sporadic visits to Nipa. Their problem at the moment seems to be lack of staff: they have no priest avalable to be stationed here permantly. They do, however, have plans for development when the staff becomes available. On Monday, 11th. July the Rev. Father Senan Glass was escorted over certain areas which might be found favourable for a station site. The Mission has not as yet made an application to lease land.

Both missions operate under Restricted Areas Permits which limit their activities to within one and a half miles' radius of this station.

In anticipation that the lease at PURIL will be granted the Methodist Mission has gone ahead and cleared five acres. Two native material houses have been erected (each valued at £20) and a third is under construction. In his work the Rev. Keightley is receiving good support from the local people, and these activities are adding to the consolidation of this area.

The Mission provides a medical clinic and their figures show that between 400 to 500 natives receive attention each month. They have plans to build a hospital at PURIL and when staff supervision (European) for this is found the Mission will specialize in maternal and infant welfare. As we have but the barest facilities of an aid-post here we are grateful for the mission's interest in this field.

The Mission (along with the Government) does not provide educational opportunities to the people of NIPA.

8. MISCELLANY :

(a) Possible 'Strip Site ? About two miles South-West of the station is a level stretch of land running in a Southerly direction from URU'WA. It was thought that this might hold possibilities for a 'strip site. However, as time did not allow a thorough investigation only a very rough traverse could be made. I believe that a 'strip 2500 to 3000 feet long is quite feasible providing width could be obtained the full length. The land has a very moderate slope rising to the North and I believe that the soil is not deep as the 'strip lies more-or-less on top of a ridge. Altitude is about 6050 feet A. S. L.

Traverses were not cut at right angles to determine width - this might throw a different light on the matter. But conversely, traverses cut in different directions might show that a 'strip in excess of 3,000 feet could be readily constructed.

The above report is given only as a matter of observation. It is not likely that a 'strip other than our present one would be required. An inspection conducted recently by the District Airport Inspector, Mr. G. H. Taylor, revealed the following: "A strip 3100' x 200' was pegged and it is suggested that initial development be for a strip from ch.200 - ch. 2500, which would allow operations by both Cats. C & D aircraft. Later extension to 3100 plus, could allow use by Cat. B Aircraft." (His 290/330/1 of 4 - 8 - 60 refers)

(b) Gas Emissions : Near EGENDA on the Eastern side of the Basin small quantities of a gas were found to effuse from the ground. This gas has a similar odour, though slight, to high octane fuel. It ignites spontaneously when brought into contact with a flame and the gas burns with a pale yellow flame.

I have heard reports of two other areas of such gas emissions. One is near PABARONGA and the other lies about an hour's walk West of BOIA. There is, however, a subtle difference in these two places - the gas is said to occasionally flare up by self-ignition. The story was told that pigs have sometimes been baked above the flame.

Samples of the gas from EGENDA could be obtained if required.

(c) Limestone Caves : Two shallow limestone caves are located on the Western side of the Basin. They are of little significant value in themselves but their mythology was thought to be of interest.

Many many years ago two natives lived at the foot of the Karinj hills. One was KOHANASI of KARLEL, and the other SHEMBISI of TOMBERA. One day SHEMBISI killed one of KOHANASI's pigs. Now KOHANASI was not a little upset by this for he then sought the life of SHEMBISI. The native fled to a small hole in the limestone bluff near SEGENDA. He entered it and hid. KOHANASI followed him; he found the hole, searched for SHEMBISI but could not find him. He lit a fire and tried to smoke his prey out - but with no success. After some time he gave up and returned home.

SHEMBISI then came out from hiding. He tracked KOHANASI and saw him go into the cave near SJOMKABEL. He entered and tried to find him, but KOHANSI had disappeared. He too lit a fire and tried to smoke KOHANASI out, but also with no success.

The next that was heard of KOHANASI was in the Waga Valley. Near a place called KUMJAP KOHANASI found a man 'like a new born dog' - he was deaf, dumb, and blind. All day he stayed in his house and cried with misery. KOHANASI took pity on this man and through a series of miracles cured him of his plight.

Near the house of this man was a tree, UMP, and often a red bird was seen to sit amongst the branches and peck at the fruit. However, this was no ordinary bird. It was in fact a light-skinned woman who had the power of changing herself into a bird. And as she perched aloft and pecked at the fruit other berries would fall to the ground. Immediately they were changed into Mother-of-Pearl shell, and all around the base of this tree lay numerous shells.

Now although KOHANASI cured the man's sight he also gave him certain definite instructions not to look at this tree. Nevertheless ony day curiosity overcame the instructions and as the man looked the bird took fright and flew away, never to return again.

Later KOHANASI distributed the shell from around the base of the tree and laid down the folklore of bride-price payment

and the purchase of certain items. Some of the 'original' shell is said to be still held by natives on the Western side of the Basin. These are some of the 'name' Mother-of-Pearl, and are held as precious valuables.

INFORMANT : PIEP / HONT of YORAL

INTERPRETER : TIMBA / PUTAP

9. ANTHROPOLOGICAL

Ceremonies to K E B I L :

During the course of the patrol two ceremonies to KEBIL were observed. Though to the same spirit, these two ceremonies were quite different in their form of presentation.

The first that was observed was the KEBIL - PAGIHAL, on June the 28th. The essence of this ceremony lay around a certain vine, KELISA. On the morning of the occasion about fifty men held this vine and with the stamping of feet they shuttled backwards and forwards as a 'train'. Around them danced two youths; one held a rattle and the other beat upon a drum. Initially all danced before a small ceremonial house, SA'ANDA. However, after an hour or so of this the whole 'train' shuttled out into a clearing. Here the leader shouted a certain chant (Ka - Kawila) and to this the train joined in as a chorus. As they did so they first raised and then lowered the vine. This was repeated three times. The vine was then dropped and all retired to the ceremonial ground for traditional dancing.

The second ceremony observed was the KEBIL - KONGOL-SHUAL. The essence of this ceremony lay around two puppets - the KONGOL-SHUALs. Both of these, dressed as men and with small wigs and Bird-of-Paradise plumes, were placed in front of the SA'ANDA. Before them danced two youths,each beating upon his drum.

Now as these two danced the male population of their group hid a short distance away: they were seated on a long narrow bridge over a rather swampy section of ground. Both mature men and young boys were here. Everything was absolutely quiet: there was no talking whatsoever. Occasionally the whole group

would stand up, stay standing for a while, and then sit down again - but without so much as a murmur.

After some time a young lad dressed as a cassowary found his way down to the bridge. Behind him, and tramping their way through the pit-pit, came all his clan folk and visitors to the ceremony. As they approached the bridge all who were hiding on it stood up. Then with much shouting all jumped from the bridge for dry land. They continued on up to the ceremonial ground and their guests followed them. Traditional dancing followed in the ceremonial ground.

The interpretation of the cassowary was that originally the animal alone roamed the bush, and that only later did man f follow its tracks and make settlements.

Both ceremonies - PAGINAL and KONGOL-SHUAL - were followed by pig-kills.

It was said that after each ceremony the rope vine (in the case of the PAGINAL) or the puppets (in the case of the KONGOL-SHUAL) are covered with pig fat, this then covered with the bark of the Hoop Pine, and the whole then burried in some sodden area.

The KONGOL-SHUAL and the PAGINAL are said to follow in a set cycle. Four PAGINAL ceremonies are held over a period varing from twelve to eighteen years. The time interval between each ceremony is not standard; rather, it is directly dependant upon the time taken to propagate the required numbers of pigs which are slaughtered in the pig-kills. The KONGOL-SHUAL is held after the fourth PAGINAL - that is, about three to five years later. Thus this ceremony is held about once in every generation in each particular group.

On the surface both ceremonies appear to be part of a whole fertility cult - applicable to the women, gardens, and pigs alike. The burrial of the rope vine (KELISA) and the KONGOL-SHUALs in the sodden ground, for example, suggests to the people the revitalization of gardening ground. I have seen since the festivities a few new gardens being made within the close vicinity of the ceremonial ground, and I expect many

more to follow. I believe also that marriages have a close connection with these ceremonies.

However, underlying this the people believe in the ceremonies as a necessary surety against all forms of sickness. The ceremony is held to drive away the bad spirits : health and virile propagation will follow as a natural consequence.

Certain stones ('KEBIL stones') have an important function to fulfil in the ceremonies, but I am not well acquainted with what this is. I know that on the day of the ceremonies the stones are painted with clay orchers and covered with pig fat. Near them small pigs are sacrificed. And if sickness should per mischance occour between ceremonies then a pig is usually sacrificed over these stones to appease the spirits.

From observations made at these festivities it appears that the ceremonies hold many of the characteristics of the TIMP ceremonies of Mendi. I understand that TIMP is a fairly new innovation to Mendi, and that this spirit has, in fact, been superimposed over KEBIL. Notwithstanding, however, that the essence of the old ceremonies is maintained.

A photographic supplement as APPENDIX 'E' shows some aspects of the ceremony described above.

. . . . . .

The above section on Anthropology is very brief, I realize. It has not been possible in just a few short weeks to gain sufficient insight into a traditional ritual, many aspects of which are held as a close secret. The people are naturally reluctant to discuss openly such matters with a stranger. However, it is hoped that further information will be gained as the confidence of the informants is won, and that further questioning will reveal the spiritual attributes of KEBIL - attributes about which at present I know little.

. . . . . .

CONCLUSION :

This patrol succeeded in making good contact with the people. Probably some 80% of the population visited camps and attended discussions. A quiet interest was shown on occasions in our code of justice and a few minor disputes were brought up for consideration. This is quite pleasing as it shows that our efforts are meeting with some success.

Names were recorded, but only as an aid to consolidation. Often times the family group set down was thought not to be accurate, but nevertheless the statistical information compiled will find its use.

The attitude of the people towards the patrol was at all times cordial. The fact that the patrol was able to employ local carriers to assist in movement of stores from village to village supports this statement

I believe it would be desirable to mount another patrol to this area within the next few months. Although all the people live close to the station there is sometimes a tendency for small groups in a slightly inaccessible place to live as an isolated community. I believe further that it would be most desirable to have a Medical Assistant accompany the next patrol.

Robt. A. Hoad.
(R. A. Hoad)
Patrol Officer

APPENDIX 'A' - N I P A PATROL REPORT No. 6 -1959/60

Report on members of the Royal Papuan and New Guinea Constabulary accompanying the patrol.

No. 6975 Const. 1st. Class NAURA : In charge of the small detachment. He shows drive and energy and holds good command over his men. His patrol work is first class and I would recommend him for further promotion.

Conduct excellent, discipline excellent.

No. 9084 Constable DEMAK : He has the potential of being a better constable than what he is most of the time. He is a typical 'spurt' worker - shows bursts of energy at times and then becomes rather lax.

Conduct good to fair, discipline also.

No. 9859 Constable SINDIN : He seems to have a very temperamental nature. Sometimes he does a good job and shows a fair amount of tolerence. Other times he seems very short tempered. He is a strong walker in the bush.

Conduct fair, discipline fair.

No. 5100 Constable GIGNE : Was with the patrol for 26 days only before being transfered to Mendi. He shows enthusiasm but seems to lack the necessary sagacity and energy to back it up.

Conduct fair, discipline fair.

No. 9982 Constable TONGON : He joined the patrol as a replacement for constable GIGNE. Generally I found him to be a disappointment. He either lacks intelligence or is very slow, or both. However, he seems to be fairly trustworthy and honest with property.

Conduct fair, discipline fair.

GENERAL :

As a whole the detachment worked well and quite efficiently, though mainly through the drive of NAURA. No complaints were made against them by the local people, and I myself consider their conduct satisfactory.

NOTE: Extracts from the above have been entered in Police Records of Service and R.S. Forms forwarded to the Commissioner of police R.H. 17/8/60

Rgld. A. Hoad.
(R. A. Hoad)
Police Officer.

APPENDIX 'B' - N I P A PATROL REPORT No. 6 -1959/60

M E D I C A L and H E A L T H

In general the health of the people appears to be fairly good. The most common ailments seen were infected sores, scabies, cuts, occasional burns and old arrow wounds. Several adult males and youths have scars from arrow wounds. However, the incidence of infected wounds is fairly low - except, of course, when part of the arrow head remains loged inside. A small percentage of the people have malfunctioning joints and others show bad scars from old burns.

A number of cases of Hansenides disease were seen, all of these being in an advanced stage. There would probably be at least two dozen cases amongst the population of the area patrolled.

We have in mind sending out a small group who have contacted the disease to the Hansenide Centre, Methodist Mission, Tari. It would be unwise to send out only one or two cases as they would almost certainly abscond after a short while. The Rev. Keightley (Methodist Mission, NIPA) has suggested that we could moreorless form a small Nembi community at the Tari Centre. In this way the patients would be encouraged to complete treatment.

As a rule the people are not afraid to come forward to have small cuts etc. dressed, or to seek advice when fractures occour. However, more serious ailments are not forth coming. The people have a definite fear of either leaving their area or of hospitals- - (possibly understandably). I recall to mind two natives who had received serious arrow wounds. They were sent out to the hospital at Mendi for attention. However, they only remained there a few days, for apparently bewildered and frightened by the strange environment they absconded. One died on his way home. This did not help to promote faith in treatment from the Administration.

Unfortunately no medical personnel - native or European - was available to accompany this patrol. I believe that if a Medical Patrol conducted by a European Medical Assistant made a slow methodical visit to each hamlet in the immediate vicinity of the station something would be done to remove fear.

At present we have but one medical aid-post orderly who can provide but meager services to the people. The bulk of the work is handled by the Methodist Mission at NIPA.

Robt. A. Hood
Patrol Officer

APPENDIX 'C' - N I P A PATROL REPORT No. 6 -1959/60

STATISTICAL INFORMATION - NIPA BASIN & ENVIRONS

GROUP	TOTALS	MALES	FEMALES	Male Labour Force	Recorded as Absentees
HEREP	290	146	144	68	4
HINJIP					
(i) HARLOG	94	44	50	14	2
(ii) IBAL	94	42	52	17	10
(iii) MEMBAL	311	141	170	52	20
(iv) NANDIEP	121	71	50	29	15
KARLEL	118	65	53	21	6
KIL	246	126	120	40	2
KOMIA	272	149	123	59	11
MARK	176	85	91	34	4
PULIMAL					
(i) Previously recorded & checked	275	120	155	47	95
(ii) New records	74	41	33	15	7
SOI	278	139	139	42	11
SUMA					
(i) SUMA	225	122	103	44	23
(ii) TOMBERA	241	129	112	49	7
TROINTS (Previously recorded)	386	179	207	53	54
WOLAL	306	151	155	50	8
YORAL	210	109	101	29	15
TOTALS	3717	1859	1858	623	294
Plus TEMBIL	255	(Group not visited & census not checked.)			
TOTAL =	3972				

GRAND TOTAL 3,972

ESTIMATES of POPULATION

. . . (Conservative)

GROUP A	ESTIMATE	GROUP B	ESTIMATE
(1) KOMBILA	100	INJA	200
INT	100	WENJUP	100
KOROP	100	FPUL	150
UGUR'R	120	SAL'LUPSI	?
(11) HIR'R	200	SANG'GURU	?
KENTE	70		
LUIMP'HAGOP	100		
TOTAL	790	TOTAL	450

GROUP C	ESTIMATE	GROUP D	ESTIMATE
INJA-HANASI	200	HANDARN	100
(H)OMBAL	350	KOLOBA	100
HENEP	150	INJA-HABAGA	150
HULAL	150	ANDA	200
HANDA	100		
TOTAL	950	TOTAÖL	550

TOTAL ESTIMATE (Conservative) - 2740

REMARKS :

GROUP A : Southern section of the NIPA Basin from AR Creek to PWEA Depression (but excluding the latter)

GROUP B : North of the NIPA Basin but East of the WAGA River

GROUP C : West of the WAGA River and GROUP B

GROUP D : West of the NIPA Basin and South of the turn of the WAGA River.

NOTE :-

(1) Estimates of population based on gardens, houses, ceremonial grounds and walking tracks actually seen.

(2) It is my opinion that to attempt a census of GROUPs B, C, & D at this stage would be premature.

Robt. A. Hood
Patrol Officer.

APPENDIX 'D' - N I P A PATROL REPORT No. 6 - 1959/60

SCHEDULE of INFLUENTIAL VILLAGE NATIVES CONTACTED

GROUP	SIZE	Name & Father's Name & Remarks
HEREP	290	HOLAP / PINJS - Herep Sub-group
		KELE / SH - Sulal Sub-group
HINJIP		
(i) HAROG	94	PEMPRIAL / OMBESJ
(ii) IBAL	94	?
(iii) MEMBAL	311	MOLT / TONTO - probably the more influential
		PEA / TOWAL - ?
(iv) NANDIEP	121	HIEP / WALEBE
KARLEL	118	HEP / SOL - Magic & religious leader
		U'WA / NARP
KIL	246	WABE / KIP
KOMIA	272	SOLO / TOLIEP
MARK	176	MAEO / TRIRIAL - of Kerep Creek
		WIMAL / TRINDIL - of Kolipa Creek
PULIMAL	349	PEBEN / TOBA - Pesyal Sub-group
		LAL / HOWI - Kungk Sub-group
		IUBILIS / HAWI
		WANGK / KARIAL - Pugubug Sub-group
SCI	278	ENJON / TONAP
		But note also a young and very helpful man, though of doubtful influence, SARP /
SUMA	225	IERR/ PIAL - An old man with several wives and children - but possibly he is too old to be of assistance to the Government
TOMBERA	241	
TROINTS	386	HABO / WABI Troints Sub-group
		IBABE / SABOL Nipa Sub-group
WOLAL	306	NANGA / MENG'GHEE both of the
		ALUPISJ / WAMP Masjuwal Sub-group
		HIEP / HALOP - Harog sub-group
YORAL	210	PIEP / HONT
		LUN / PIBIRIAL

Robt A. Hoad
Patrol Officer

---:::::::::::::::::---

APPENDIX 'E' - NIPA PATROL REPORT

No. 6 - 1959 / 60

CONDUCTED BY : R.A. HOAD
PATROL OFFICER

SCENES OF THE NIPA BASIN

1. NIPA BASIN to North, from ARO

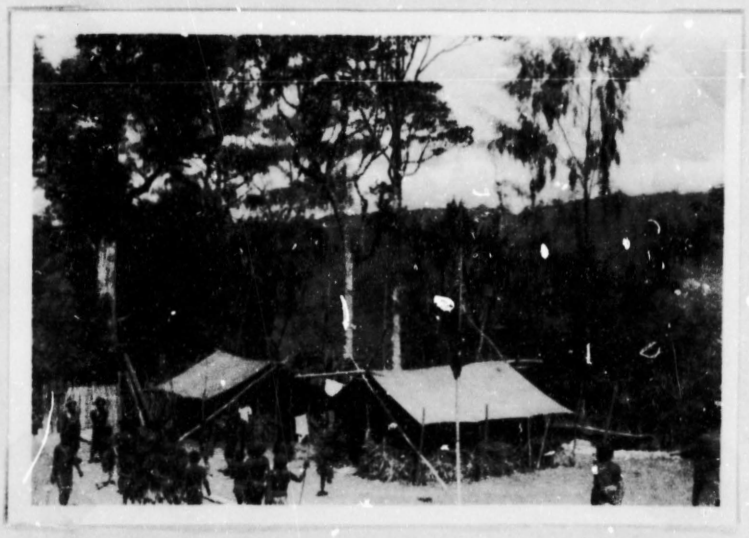
2. NIPA BASIN to West, from TIRIL

3. GARDENS in outcrops of limestone, near TIRIL

Page 2. SCENES FROM TIRIL

1. Limestone gorge, AR Creek

2. WASJIMBO-ANDA skull box, at TIRIL



3. Camp at TIRIL, altitude 6610 feet A. S. L.

PEOPLE OF THE NIPA BASIN

1. Old man in front of a spirit house

2. In-formal social gathering of the women

3. Two women in mourning for one deceased.

Page 4.

PEOPLE OF THE NIPA BASIN

1. Youth with bow & arrows

2. Women with digging sticks

3. Mens house. at TIRI

Page 5. SCENES FROM THE KEBIL CEREMONIES

1. Traditional dancing - with bows & arrows

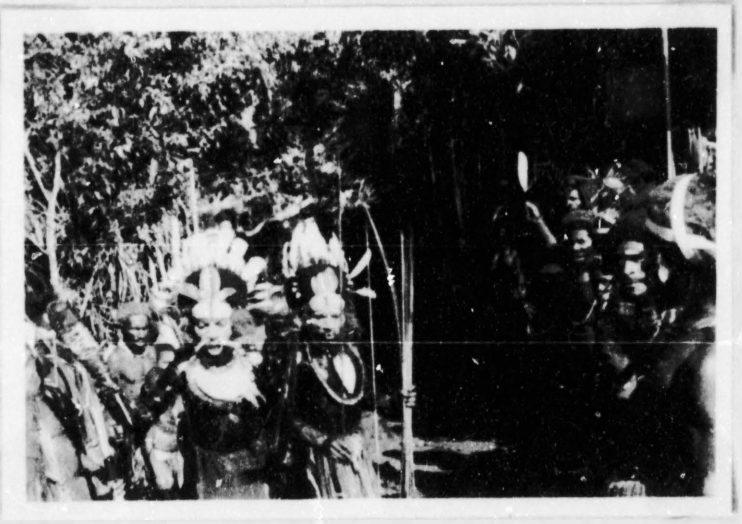
2. The hosts & guests, males & females, all participating in traditional dancing

3. The spirit house, SA-ANDA

Page 6. SCENES FROM THE KEBIL - PAGINAL

1. The 'train' holding the vine

2. The rope vine, KELISA



3. The two who dance around the human 'train'
Note passage way leading to the spirit house,
SA-ANDA.

Page 7. SCENES FROM THE KEBIL - KONGOL-SHUAL CEREMONY

1. The KONGOL-SHUALS

2. Hidding on the 'bridge'

3. The 'cassowary boy'

4. The clans folk & guests follow the 'cassowary' down to the 'bridge'